



RS MEDIA



서울역 네크로멘서

진설우 장편소설

Seoul Station's Necromancer

– Seoul-yeog Nekeulomaenseo –

- Volume 4 -

-Author-

진설우

[NaughtyOtter (Wuxiaworld)]

Chapter 88

Heading Towards the End (1)

He had finally reached this point.

He wasn't alone anymore. He had comrades to share the battlefield with.

However, it was too early to let go of his nervousness.

The time for peace and freedom was still far off.

72 Commanders. Moreover, if he defeated Trahnet, who no one had seen before, then would a period of peace arrive?

“Now I'll be able to hunt easily.”

Each individual Death Knight would have the authority to command.

They had enough Charisma to control the Skeletons, so even if Woojin was far away, the Skeleton Soldiers would come under the jurisdiction of the Death Knights.

When he thought about his future hunts, which would be much easier from now on, he felt as if level 80 wasn't that far away.

If the Lich Janis was unsealed, he wouldn't even have to worry about leveling up. The Lich was quite proficient at hunting everything at once.

“The Control being used is continuously decreasing.”

The Control needed to keep Al Assad in line was decreasing rapidly. It seemed Kiba and the other Death Knights were properly educating the new recruit.

When he thought about them bickering within the Summoning Room, it made Woojin smirk.

Sunggoo's hunt was almost at an end. Woojin started to take out the cooking utensils

from the Inventory began preparing the ingredients he was going to cook. He was in a good mood. He started a fire and hung a pot over it.

He dismembered a dead water buffalo. As he was separating and tenderizing the meat, Bibi suddenly showed up next to him.

Her cheeks were puffed out as she complained next to Woojin.

“Uh-whew. The Summoning Room is too noisy-ahong.”

It was understandable. They were in the midst of deciding the pecking order.

“Just go in after it quiets down a little bit.”

“Uh whew. Soon, it'll be filled with Skeletons, so I doubt there will be quiet day in the future-ahong.”

“I guess so...”

All of Woojin's familiars had to wait within the Summoning room.

He had to summon new Skeletons every time he wanted to use them. However, if the Skeleton Soldiers were put under the command of the Death Knights, they would also have to wait in the Summoning room until each commander called them out through a summon.

Woojin's job was to reinforce the troops with new soldiers. The command and logistics were all taken care of by the Death Knights. From now on, he will be able to show off his presence as the Immortal King.

As the Death Knights' level rises, the Skeletons assigned under them would increase. The Summoning Room would soon be full of.....

“What are you going to do? It's probably going to get more raucous in the future.”

“Ooh-whew. It's all right. I'll just hunt from now on-ahong.”

Woojin was delighted by Bibi's reaction, which was a bit brighter today.

“Are you feeling a little bit better now?”

"Hoong. Who care if I'm better or not-ahong? I have to quickly get stronger, so I can use my Nightmare on that bastard-ahong."

When she thought about Rahsmode, who had made her experience death, her fighting spirit burned brightly. Woojin laughed when he saw Bibi act this way. He could force his familiars to follow his orders, but Woojin didn't treat his familiars that way.

"Let's start in earnest from the next Dungeon on."

"All right-ahong."

It seemed that Sunggoo had defeated all the monsters and was returning with the Return Stone. It has been said that learning was stealing. Sunggoo had witnessed Woojin constantly solo clear Dungeons, and now he would soon be able to clear a 6 star Dungeon by himself.

'Well, it'll still be dangerous for him. If Haesol grew a little bit more to support him, then it would be possible... '

The two of them learned all kinds of things under the duress of Woojin. Moreover, Woojin didn't spare any investing Reinforcement Stones on them, so their basic Stats were superior to a Roused of the same Rank.

He had almost half of his Undead army now, but he wanted a different troop.

He needed a troop made out of Alandal's Roused.

Sunggoo would be the vanguard, and Haesol would be the commander.

He still had a lot of things to teach them.

[President. I've excavated all the bloodstones.]

Haesol's telepathic message rang in his head. Woojin sent back his own telepathic message.

[Already?]

[Yes. It is all finished.]

[Then come over here for now.]

With the help of Sunggoo, the speed of the group hunting was very fast now. However, Haesol had to be in charge of gathering all the loot by herself. He expected her to excavate the bloodstones to the best of her ability, as they would have to throw the rest away. However, she said she had excavated all the bloodstones, so he couldn't help but be puzzled.

"Heh heh. I got them all, hyung-nim."

Meanwhile, Sunggoo approached Woojin, drooling as he looked at the food that was being cooked. Somehow, this guy was getting more simple as time passed.

"Let's eat when haesol get here."

"Yes. Heh heh."

After a moment, Haesol closed the distance. Behind Haesol, Jackson followed with bags of bloodstones mounted on him, and a murder of 14 crows followed behind her.

"Uh? There are monsters still left?"

Sunggoo was about to defeat the murder of crows, but Woojin stopped him.

"It seems she Tamed them?"

"Uh? You are right."

The crows weren't chasing after Haesol. They were just following her.

As the name implied, they were black birds who attacked their enemies with sharp, knife-like beaks.

"What are those?"

At Woojin's query, Haesol told her story in a boastful manner.

"Haha. I Tamed them."

"How?"

Haesol was slowly becoming stronger, but the Knife-beak Crows were all level 32.

He couldn't believe Haesol was able to Tame the 3 star monsters. The saber-toothed tiger Jackson was protecting her, so she wouldn't have been harmed...

"When I was excavating bloodstones from the field of corpses, these guys appeared. They couldn't approach us, since they were intimidated by Jackson. However, I decided to give them several monster corpses for them to eat."

It seemed she didn't capture them through submission. She had succeeded in getting close to them.

"I acted a little bit."

"....."

Unexpectedly, the monsters might be weak to acting...

"So how did you excavate the bloodstones so quickly?"

"These guys helped me."

"Huh?"

Woojin didn't act like himself as he was loss for words. Then his eyes became round.

"That's possible?"

"Yes. I'm able to communicate with them to a certain extent."

It seemed she naturally awakened to the Skills like 'Commune' and 'Psychomancy'. These Skills were essential for Tamers.

Woojin stroked his chin.

He thought about the characteristics of the Knife-beak Crows.

The Knife-beak Crow's favorite food is the intestines of other animals. They used their sharp beaks to pierce through skin, and those beaks were perfect for finding and pulling out the intestines. Moreover, the crows had the habit of gathering shiny items.

Now they became friends with a Tamer, so it wasn't unreasonable for them to move under the instruction of the Tamer's will.

"Not bad."

Woojin nodded his head. He really thought this was great.

Necromancer could only summon the Undead, who had a deep-seated hate for the living.

The Undead army charged without any fear, so they were well suited for battle. However, they fell quite short when gathering items or excavating bloodstones.

Woojin could order them, but he would have to control them himself. The Undead couldn't do the task by themselves. It was like playing with puppets. If he had to control them, he would rather do it himself. It was easier and faster.

"Show me."

"Yes, sir."

As if Haesol was concentrating, she closed her eyes for a brief moment.

The crows perched in the surrounding flapped their wings to take flight. They headed towards the corpses of the monster hunted by Sunggoo.

Soon, their sharp beaks were ripping into the corpses. They took out the bloodstones, and they gathered it all in one place. Woojin asked as if he was fascinated.

"They know which ones have the bloodstones?"

"Mmm. I can sense it a little bit."

"Huh?"

"To send my Telepathic messages, I tried hard to sense the energies around me. Before I knew it, I could sense it a little bit..."

Monsters, humans and items all emitted a unique energy.

One could call it magic, or even life energy.

The dead monsters emits an evil energy, but the corpses with the bloodstones let out a mixture of magical energy and evil energy. Haesol must have understood this at an instinctual level.

No, it wasn't instinct. She must have awakened to a Sensing Type ability.

This was another additional effect of learning Telepathy.

"Ho-oh."

Woojin stroked his chin.

He knew Haesol had the potential to advance very quickly, but he never expected such rapid progress. Moreover, she had exceptional talent.

Woojin looked at Sunggoo.

'Auto-Kiting'

Woojin looked towards Haesol.

'Auto Farming'

The corner of Woojin's mouth lifted.

He had brought a newly picked Roused to order around, yet her new abilities opened his eyes to a new possibility.

He had stumbled upon it, but it was complete now.

He achieved the perfect automatic hunting method.



Dungeon Entrance.

"Well done, president."

Woo-soonghoon, who had been on standby, lifted a warm cup of green tea towards him. Woojin took a sip, and he asked a question.

“Do we still have some time left before the appointment ends?”

“Yes, sir. You cleared it so fast that there's 1 hour 12 minutes left.”

“That's plenty of time. You should call the Management Bureau and ask them to send a monster management employee.”

“Yes, sir. I will do so.”

The cause must be the large crows that came out behind Che-Haesol. Haesol wasn't the first one to become a Tamer Type Roused. Numerous Tamer Type Roused had existed before her.

The monsters they trained must be registered with the Management Bureau. Moreover, they couldn't travel outside the authorized region.

After drinking another gulp of the warm green tea, Woojin looked towards Sunggoo and Haesol.

“Let's go one more time.”

“Yes, hung-nim.”

“Understood, president.”

One hour.

Even if one spent four times longer within the high rank Dungeons, four hours to clear a 5 star Dungeon was still very short. However, Woojin was confident he could do it if he was with his auto-bots.



Inside the van returning to the office.

A professional road manager was driving instead of Soonghoon, and Chief secretary Soonghoon sat in the front seat. Kahng-woojin and Hong-sungwoo sat in the passenger

seats.

Haesol was following within a container truck with her Tamed monsters.

“Ah, it's too bad. It would have been better if we could have caught several more of them.”

“Heh heh. Still, we got twenty of them. With them in tow, we really don't have to worry about excavating bloodstones.”

There was a limit to Haesol's Intimacy Stat. She reached her limit after Taming the saber-toothed tiger Jackson, and the 20 Knife-blade Crows. It was impossible for her to tame or control any more monsters.

“Haesol will now have to work hard.”

“Heh heh. Now Haesol will start becoming much stronger.”

Haesol was already level 31.

For over 2 years, Woojin had been stuck as a Rank F in the past. When he observed his subordinate rising to Rank D after clearing a Dungeon three times, he couldn't help but let out a sigh at the speed. Still, it left much to be desired for Woojin.

In the end, her magical energy, Stat, Taming, and abilities were corrected using Reinforcement Stones.

It wasn't as if her battle experience and Dungeon clearing experience was getting better. Truthfully, Haesol was still a noob.

“Oh yeah. Do you think Minchan is busy?”

“He's probably busy.”

“Do you know the Titan Guild's phone number?”

“Mmmm. Let me find out.”

Soonghoon called the office, then handed his handphone towards Woojin.

"President. It's vice president Jung."

"Jeez. I guess he's really worried."

Woojin took the hand phone.

"Just text me their phone number."

[What business do you have with them?]

"Ah. I just have something I want to ask them."

[I can ask them myself. I get back to you with their reply.]

"No. I know you are busy. Just send me their phone number. This isn't anything important."

[Are you really sure this isn't anything important?]

"Jeez."

Woojin put some strength into his voice, and it immediately caused Minchan to tuck his tails between his legs.

[Understood. I'll text the number to president's phone.]

"All right. Continue to work hard. I'll be arriving at the office soon, so let's have dinner together. You probably don't have the time to leave the office? I'll have a jajangmyeon."

"I also want a jajangmyeon."

"I'll have a jjamppong."

Woojin grinned when Sungoo and Soonghoon butted in to make their orders.

"You heard them, right? I want you to order two jajang, and one jjamppong. Call Haesol to find out what she wants."

[Yes. Understood.]

Minchan prayed Woojin wouldn't cause any more trouble. Minchan ended the call without knowing if Woojin received his heartfelt feelings or not.

After ending the call, he handed the phone back to Soonghoon.

Ddi-ring.

Woojin heard the sound alerting him to a text message. He took out his hand phone.

[Direct line to the Titan Guild's secretary office. XXX-XXX-XXXX]

“How do I make an international call?”

“I'll do it for you.”

Ddoo-roo-roo-roo.

With the help of Soonghoon, the phone started to ring. During all of this, Sunggoo had been tilting his head in confusion.

“Uh? We don't have a translator. Does Mr. Soonghoon know how to speak English?”

“Ah. No. I can't.”

Soonghoon was so taken aback that he quickly looked towards the road manager, and the driver shook his head with an embarrassed expression on his face. Woojin smirked when he saw them being flustered.

[Hello.]

[This is Alandal's Kahng-woojin.]

Eloquent English started to flow out of Woojin's mouth. Sunggoo and Soonghoon's eyes became round.

[I'll immediately connect you to the guild master.]

The secretary must have received some training on how to respond when the Alandal guild contacted them. The call was immediately directed towards the guild master.

[Alandal master Kahng. What can I do for you?]

[Do you remember the head I showed you before when I was in the US?]

[Do you mean Al Assad?]

[Oh. You know his name, so you finished gathering information on him?]

[Not really. He's a really famous assassin, so..... He isn't really affiliated with an organization. He operated like a mercenary for hire. He worked a lot for the rebel forces in Afghanistan. There were some evidence suggesting he had worked in Iraq and Syria on several occasions. We are trying hard to find who was behind the...]

[I know who was behind it.]

[What? Is that true?]

Woojin smirked. Of course, he knew it.

He had asked Al Assad himself. Woojin found out who had given him the order and he was able to backtrack to find out who was behind it.

Woojin just wanted a little bit help from the Titan Guild.

[Do you want to go catch the mastermind behind the terrorist attack?]

How dare he send an assassin against him...

It was time for revenge.

Chapter 89

Heading Towards the End (2)

The core members of Alandal sat around a table within the president's room. They were arguing about whether they should pour the sweet and sour sauce over the fried pork.

As the president, Kahng-woojin had the final say, but this horrible situation developed because he had said, 'I don't care.'

At Soonghoon's insistence, they started doing rock-paper-scissors, and the Dip the Pork Sect won. Woojin, who had watched this all unfold, yelled at them to 'just pour the sauce', so the sauce was poured over the dish of fried pork. This elicited a yell of victory from the Pour the Sauce and Eat It Sect.

Woojin was mixing his jajangmyeon when he saw Minchan just sitting there doing nothing. He pointed towards the bowl of jajangmyeon with his chin.

"What are you doing? The noodle is going to get soggy."

Instead of picking up his chopsticks, Minchan let out an aggrieved sound.

"President. Why do you always have to do this to me?"

"Do what?"

"Do you know what breaking news is on right now on CCB?"

"What?"

Woojin mixed his jajangmyeon, then he took a big bite.

"They are saying the US government, Titan, and Alandal are forming a joint counter-terrorism unit."

"Is that so?"

Woojin picked up a piece of fried pork soaked in sweet and sour sauce. He dipped it in soy sauce and ate it.

Mmm. This place was quite delicious.

“Even the people over there have cheap lips. It hadn't been too long yet they are already talking about it on TV.”

“President. You can't be so laid back right now.”

“What? What's the problem?”

“People from the media are calling to request an interview. The quantity of calls is enough to paralyze our business.”

Currently, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say all the employees outside the president's room was holding a phone.

“Just pull out the phone cords.”

“That...”

What kind of nonsense answer was that?

“In the end, aren't we going to turn them all down? Why do we have to answer each call?”

“But our other work...”

“Didn't you say the phone calls were already paralyzing our business?”

Why was the president being like this? Did the president attend some logic class?

Minchan wanted to argue with him, but no words came to his mind.

“But...”

“Do you receive the application papers through the phones?”

“No, but...”

“Then stop using the phones.”

Ah, that's... Still, no matter how one looks at it...

Did it make sense to not answer the phones, when the phones were the source of the problem? Minchan calmed his agitated heart, and then he started talking in a calm manner.

“Whew. President. If we do that then the public image of our guild and the trust of the other guilds we are working with...”

Woojin smirked.

“Can our reputation get any worse?”

“That's...”

Ah-ha!

Our company's image was already bad from the start.

Woojin was his own lord throughout heaven and earth.

They were the Korea's best, unreasonable guild.

They were a guild that would immediately close down if their skilled master, who could close consecutive 6 star Dungeons, was absent.

Minchan wore a blank expression, as if he had just been sucker punched. Woojin nodded his towards Soonghoon.

“Go pull it all out.”

“Yes, sir.”

After becoming the Chief Secretary, Soonghoon followed Woojin's orders as if there was a fire chasing after him. He immediately exited the president's room and started pulling out all the telephone plugs.

“Now you don't have any problems. Just relax and work.”

“.....”

“You don't have to respond to everything.”

Sometimes ignoring people was the right answer.

Woojin put another sweet and sour pork inside his mouth and he chewed.

“Hey, the food from here is really tasty. What is the name of this place?”

“They are called Somoon-gahk.”

“From now on, order from here.”

“Yes, sir.”

Woo-soonghoon sucked up to him, agreeing with whatever Woojin said.

“President's ability to handle work is on the level of Zhuge Liang.”

Woojin smirked as he watched Soonghoon flatter him.

Recently, everything he did was cute. He heard by chance that Soonghoon's family wasn't well off, and that was the reason why he was trying so hard. He felt a little bit of pity for him.

“Dude... You should take home a larger salary starting from today.”

“President's kindness is boundless like the sky.”

Broken. This was a broken business.

Minchan let out a sigh inside.

At the unexpected instruction, Soonghoon let out a ridiculous praise. At least, he reacted in a normal way.

Di-ri-ri-ri.

Minchan's handphone, as well as several handphones of the employees, rang almost

simultaneously.

Even Haesol, who had joined recently, was getting a call on her phone.

The media attempted any method that would give them a chance to make contact with those in the Alandal guild.

“Turn it all off.”

“Yes, sir.”

Everyone started to turn off their hand phone, and Minchan also grabbed his hand phone.

“Huh huh.”

Minchan realized something as he pressed the power button.

He decided to give up. As he thought about it more, he realized there would be no complications. They weren't some government entity. They didn't need to explain their decisions.

The government will take care of the aftermath.

Well...

Ddi-ri-reek.

When the screen on the hand phone went dark, he felt the extreme stress he had been feeling decrease rapidly.

However, there was one issue they had to resolve.

“President. How are you going to do the interview when you are heading towards the Middle East?”

“What about it?”

What about it...

Minchan would be picking the employee for the Support Division, but Woojin's participation in picking the Roused was a must.

"We have no idea when you will come back from the Middle East. Won't we run into a problem if a fixed schedule is set?"

"It shouldn't take too long."

If one could quell the terrorists in couple days, then the world would be rid of the terrorists by now.

"Let's just choose them in one sitting."

"What? Is that possible?"

"Yes. Let's do it in one go. Try renting a big gym."

He just had to filter out the bastards with evil souls, then pick people with high potential. Those qualities couldn't be seen through documents. He had to do the interview by using all of his Sensing and Observation Type Skills.

"So when should we schedule it?"

"Mmm."

Woojin ate another bite of the jajangmyeon, then he turned to look at Haesol. He had planned on giving Haesol the command, so Haesol had to grow up to a certain point. At the very least, she had to be Rank B...

"Let's schedule it in 3 weeks. Until that time, I want you to hire the employees for the Support Division, then find a location where he will hold the interview."

"Mmm. Understood."

After getting the answers to big problems that needed solving, Minchan opened his jajangmyeon to mix it. The noodle had gotten soggy, so it wasn't mixing well. Woojin clicked his tongue when he saw this.

"See. You should have mixed it before the noodles expanded."

“It's all right.”

Jajangmyeon wasn't the important issue right now.

Minchan asked as he mixed his jajangmyeon.

“How about joining up with the Titan in 3 weeks time?”

“What are you talking about?”

“What?”

Woojin grinned.

“I'll be returning before that.”

“Do you mean after 3... 3 weeks?”

“It won't take 3 weeks. It'll be about 1 week.”

“.....”

Woojin hadn't meant he would be leaving after 3 weeks.

He planned on returning within the 3 weeks...

“So when are you going to leave?”

“Call the Titan guild for me. Tell them to pick me up when they leave for the Middle East.”

“.....”

If someone saw him, one would think Woojin was calling for a taxi.

However, Minchan soon conceded the point. Woojin was worth such troubles. No, they should be the ones escorting Woojin.

“Understood.”

"Then I'll be going home now."

"I'll take you there."

Woo-soonghoon, who was Woojin's personal assistant, immediately stepped forward.

He had to protect Woojin from the reporters.

"I want you to make an appointment tomorrow at a suitable 6 star Dungeon. Before the plane comes, I want to teach you as much as I can."

It would take him long to return from the Middle East, but he had to lay down the groundwork for Sungwoo and Haesol so they could clear the Dungeons together.

"Yes, sir."

Woojin ate all of his jajangmyeon and left work thinking about his plans tomorrow. Minchan started composing an e-mail he was going to send to the Titan guild.



Titan Guild Headquarters.

Master Deacon couldn't help but labor over this incredible offer.

'He was going to ferret out and exterminate the terrorists.'

The previous missile terrorist attack was a horrible nightmare from the perspective of Americans. It was a disaster committed by a fellow human being. Some might find his stance amusing, but he hated terrorists more than the unpredictable Dungeon Breaks...

Woojin knew who was behind Al Assad.

Moreover, he had taken the initiative to ask Deacon. He was going to extract his revenge, so should Deacon go along with him?

He held an incredible amount of hatred towards terrorist organizations, but there were several issues that made him hesitate.

'Several American businesses are involved in this.'

This was one of the evidence found during the investigation.

In the case of the artificial Dungeon and Rashmode, they had learned much from the gang members they had caught. They were receiving support from an unknown company... The identity of the company was only known by the boss, but unfortunately, he was killed in the Rashmode incident.

Moreover, several scientists that were found on location were confirmed to have ties with several companies. Still, they were only at the early stages of evaluating the evidence.

The investigation was still well under way.

They were stealthily and quietly...

Then Woojin's offer came in.

If they moved too rashly, the enemy could cut off their own tail and deny everything. Then they wouldn't be able to hold the culprits accountable. Was it the right move to just go ahead and move against them?

There was another worry.

'Will the government move?'

Of course, the companies would have ties to some in the government. Maybe this would be all for naught if the government didn't want to retaliate against these terrorist. This still meant Korea's Alandal Guild would be heading towards the Middle East regardless of what they did.

A terrorist attack had occurred on US soil, but a Korean guild would be heading towards the Middle East to exact revenge instead of the US government and a US guild.

'This isn't good.'

If the Titans didn't participate in this, they won't suffer monetarily from it, but they would lose something important. No, the damage from losing this would be incalculable.

It was the Titan's reputation, and what they stood for.

They were portrayed as the best guild in the US, and part of their image was the fact that they protected the US. This image would take a hit.

It might not seem like a big deal right now. However, if the Holy Maiden's prophecy was true, it would be fatal for them when the great catastrophe hits earth.

The Titans must have symbolic value.

When the catastrophe comes, people must not lose their moral compasses. The Titan guild had to be their hope and shield. This is why they had to accept this offer.

They had to risk the government disagreeing with them.

Moreover, they had to make the decision soon...

Deacon pressed the intercom button and paged his secretary.

"Contact the CCB."

[Yes, master.]

He'll start the fire and see what happens. If they don't act now, then they won't be able to guide world as the lighthouse that will light the way in the catastrophe.

They will have sufficient justification to do this. Americans wanted this.

The government won't be able to block this.

He didn't know who worked behind the scenes, but their hearts will soon be filled with worry.



Hwarang's Guild Master.

These days Lee-sahngcho was in a foul mood.

He was always in a bad mood before, but it had gotten much worse these days.

When he turned on the tv, listened to the radio, and surfed the internet, it was only full of stories about Alandal.

Kahng-woojin, Kahng-woojin, Kahng-woojin.

Everything was about him. Even the gossip section was overflowing with his story.

[Hello. This is MBS reporter Jung-sooyun and we are at the Chinese restaurant. They are the only ones that has been able to speak over the phone with the Alandal Guild. We are going to interview the owner of the restaurant.]

[Ah, jeez. Bee- Bee- You are driving away the customers Beep- Bee- Go away Bee- Bee-] (TLN: Beep = swear words being censored)

[Yes. As expected of the restaurant that has the last working phone connection to Alandal, they are quite violent and aggressive. They...]

The owner of the Chinese restaurant was angry as he got into it with the crowd of reporters gathered around his restaurant. Lee-sahngho turned off the TV with the remote.

“They are making a fuss out of nothing... Hoo...”

Hwarang guild's master Lee-sahngho let out a sigh.

Recently, he felt as if he was suffering from neurosis.

The world had gone crazy, and everyone only talked about Kahng-woojin.

“The best in the industry. Bullshit...”

It had been a long time, since the terrorist organization in the Middle East responsible for the assassination had contacted him. In the first place, they had used an untraceable number and they initiated the contact. Unless they called him, Lee-sahngho had now way of contacting them.

Director Kim ignored his call, and even congressman Che avoided meeting him.

After losing the only Rank A Roused Lee-yunhwee, Hwarang guild's power was in a free fall, and Alandal Guild's influence was shooting up into the sky.

They were up so high that he didn't even dare to plot against them from behind the scenes.

He felt as if everything was closing in on him.

It was at that moment when a white cloud of smoke suddenly formed in front of Lee-sahngho to create an apparition.

“W... who is it? What are you?”

He was a Rank B Roused. Lee-sahngho was surprised, but he calmly glared at his opponent. One could see glimpses into the smoke, but he couldn't tell if the apparition was male or female. The unknown entity laughed.

[Do you want revenge?]

He had never heard of these words that rang inside his head, yet he could understand its meaning. It was an unfamiliar language, yet the meaning was being conveyed.

“Who are you?”

[Don't you want revenge against the bastard, who killed Lee-yunhwee?]

The bastard who killed Lee-yunhwee...

What did this person know?

“Kahng-woojin?”

[Kook kook kook. I'll give you the power that will allow you to get your revenge. Go to the Dungeon where your dongsaeng died.]

“What?”

Why should he follow orders from some unknown person? No, what is the identity of this thing?

Lee-sahngho let out a yell, and his eyes suddenly opened.

“What the hell? Did I faint?”

Did he momentarily lose consciousness because of his stress? The vision was so vivid that it hadn't felt like a dream. Lee-sahngho tilted his head in confusion.

At that moment, his eyes opened wide when he saw the sword placed at the spot where the apparition had appeared.

It was the sword his dongsaeng Lee-yunhwee had used.

He quickly approached it to check the grip. It had Yunhwee's initial engraved on it, so he was sure this was her sword.

“H... how?”

His dongsaeng had perished inside a Dungeon, so how could this sword still exist? At the time, Kahng-woojin had come out by himself and he didn't bring out any of his dongsaeng's possessions. This didn't make any sense.

After the Dungeon is cleared, the Dungeon is reset on the next visit.

This didn't line up with any modern theory about the Dungeons.

He suddenly recalled the words spoken by the apparition.

“Revenge, power...”

A greasy light shone in Lee-sahngho's eyes.

Chapter 90

Heading Towards the End (3)

The Holy Maiden stood in front of her goddess' statue.

"Oh, my goddess. Do I really have to go?"

She kept telling herself that she was going to go. However, she kept pushing it off until several days had passed.

Moreover, it seemed her destiny was fated to flow towards him. The Immortal had asked for the Titan Guild's cooperation, and they were about to head towards the Middle East to quell a terrorist organization.

It was as if he was waving at her to come towards him. She felt an uncomfortable feeling in her heart.

"Ha-ah."

It wasn't as if she could refuse to go. Even now, she felt her goddess' statue observing her, and there was an uncomfortable feeling inside of her heart. Her goddess had been the one to guide her to Earth in the first place.

If she wanted Melody to go to the Immortal, she must have a valid reason.

Maybe he really might be the person to save Alphen.

"I'll go."

When she made her decision, she thought she saw the goddess' statue smile or was she mistaken?

After the Holy Maiden made up her mind, she immediately passed on the goddess' oracle to the Titan's guild master. This caused Deacon to immediately come meet her.

"You can't."

Titan Guild had poured so much resource into the Holy Maiden, yet she was going to leave now? How was this acceptable?

"That is what the divine message said. Moreover, I do not want to walk down this path, but I have no choice."

"You are putting me in a tough spot."

Deacon really was in a hopeless situation.

He hadn't dispatched high rank Roused to her as Holy Knights in good faith. He wasn't helping her so she could free Alphen.

He had done all this so the Titan guild could profit from the situation.

The miraculous blessings she casted was caught on camera, and the Titan guild had become the center of attention of the world. She had also treated many people, so the Titan guild was thankful to the church of Aria. Moreover, her prophetic ability was of big help.

They had gained three times more high rank Dungeons than before, and this caused an influx of Roused joining the Titan guild. Of course, the Roused would flock towards a guild, who was excellent at obtaining Dungeons.

Many high rank Roused defected to become Holy Knights, but the Titan guild's overall strength had risen compared to before. If he had to quantitatively measure it, their expansion caused them to become several times more larger than before.

Still, how could he be satisfied with just that?

Their profit wasn't suppose to end there. In the future, she would be the important key in the widespread Dungeon Breaks, and the conquest of Alphen.

It was akin to people looking for god in a hopeless situation. When the calamity of overflowing monsters had happened, it was natural for people to look for a deity and an organization that will protect them.

If he had the Holy Maiden in his grasp, it would put the guild in a better position to respond to future situations.

Unfortunately, he couldn't block her path.

"I'm very thankful for all the careful considerations shown to me by the Titan guild up until now. I will depart after I leave everything I received behind."

Deacon's expression slightly darkened at the Holy Maiden's words.

He couldn't allow it.

"I have no choice, but to send you off, since you received an oracle. However, the Holy Knights will continue to follow you, the Holy Maiden. Moreover, our guild will actively support the Holy Maiden and the Aria church."

"Is that true?"

She, who never showed her emotions, expressed her thanks.

Deacon nodded his head as he spoke.

"Both the Aria Church and the Holy Maiden may return here at any time."

The main church of the Aria was on Planet Alphen. The church on Aria on earth was only a temporary church.

Holy Maiden Melody knew what Deacon wanted.

"Mrs. Hamilton has received the favor of the goddess and she will be able to share the goddess'

blessings. She will be named the bishop of this church."

"Thank you for your consideration, Holy Maiden."

Deacon laughed.

At the very least, this was the next best outcome.

He tried his best to convince the Holy Maiden to stay at the Titan Guild, but that wasn't possible. Thus, he was satisfied with this arrangement. The Aria church will still be with the Titan guild.

Moreover, the Holy Knights supporting the Holy Maiden were all from the Titan guild.

He was satisfied with the connection the guild had with the Holy Maiden.

“So Holy Maiden is going to the Middle East? Or do you want to head towards Korea?”

The Holy Maiden Melody thought about it for a moment, but she made her decision soon.

The goddess had told her to go to him.

“I have to go to the Middle East.”

“Please get ready.”

Deacon immediately put the guild's private plane on standby.

Woojin hadn't asked for much from the Titans.

He asked for a ride to the Middle East and wanted them to stabilize the region after he destroyed the place.

The ride would be provided by the Titan, and the latter mission would be handled by the US army.

Deacon didn't even need to go himself.

The car with the Melody and the Holy Knights headed towards the airport.



Inside the Dungeon.

“Kiba. Stop.”

[As master commands!]

Kiba's valiant voice rang out in a firm manner. One couldn't tell if it had been a fight or a spar, but both Sungoo and Haesol was lying on the floor in exhaustion.

“Ooh ooh.”

“President... Help me.”

Sunggoo had a hole in his stomach while Haesol's shoulder had been crushed. One of her legs were snapped in an awkward angle, leaving her unable to walk. They were both barely conscious, and they laid on the ground immobilized by the pain.

“Chet.”

Woojin injected the souls he gathered into them, so he could heal the two.

“Kuh-hook.”

The twisted bone reset itself, which caused an enormous amount of pain. However, their bodies were being quickly healed. After a moment, their complexion returned to a somewhat normal state. They still had blank faces as if they couldn't climb out of the mental shock.

However, Sunggoo recovered faster since he had experienced this numerous of times.

“Whew. Mr. Kiba is really strong.”

“Of course. He is an orc lord.”

He used to be a chieftain in charge of a whole tribe. Even amongst the chieftains, Kiba was a great chieftain able to represent all the other chiefs. The Gray Wing Tribe's Kiba was so well known that even Trahnet's underlings recognized him.

Rank A and Rank C.

They now barely entered the 6th Circle and 4th Circle according to Alphen's ranking system.

They were still very far off until they will be able to handle someone like Kiba.

“Haesol. Get ahold of yourself.”

“What? Yes. Yes, sir!”

She felt fear. She had thought that she was going to die. Haesol's numbed senses tightened when Woojin yelled. The image of Woojin's expression as he looked down at them was imprinted in her mind.

"You guys will be able to clear the 5 star Dungeons. If you work hard, it might be possible for you to clear a 6 star Dungeon."

"Heh heh. We owe all of this to hyung-nim's guidance."

Haesol was genuinely impressed by Sunggoo's flattery. How could someone recover so fast? Sunggoo, who had experienced numerous situations like this, looked incredible to Haesol.

"Then let's go again."

"Yes, sir."

"....."

Sunggoo's eyes were glinting again with defiance, but Haesol's face was struck with fear.

'Chet. She's too far off yet'

Of course, anyone would be afraid if they were pushed to the brink of death.

However, if one repeatedly experienced it, one could overcome it. If one didn't want to die, then one had to become stronger like Sunggoo. Haesol had to follow the same path.

Sunggo and Haesol's abilities significantly decreased the time needed to clear a Dungeon. Woojin used the remaining time to summon Death Knights like Kiba and train both of them.

There was a time difference when one was in the Dungeon, so they were able to achieve four times the progress.

Each Death Knigh used different weapons and all had their own style of fighting. As the two of them faced a variety of situations, they were able to learn the feel for live battles.

“Rakto.”

Woojin summoned and introduced his Death Knights in order. The two of them hovered over the boundary of death until it was time for Woojin to leave for the Middle East.



A black sedan stopped near Dageoo's Jookjun Station.

Hwarang's guild master Lee-sahng-ho had frantically driven his car here, and he let out a string of swear words.

“Shit. What am I doing here?”

He wasn't sure if he had been bewitched by a ghost... Even as he got off the car, he couldn't understand his own behavior. In the end, he had come here. Did he really believe in the illusion-like vision he saw?

He didn't want to believe it, but how can he when Yunhwee's sword was right in front of him?

“So who's behind this?”

After one clears a Dungeon, it re-initializes on one's re-entry. The basic monsters were newly summoned once again. Everything before the re-initialization disappeared from the Dungeon.

Someone was going against this law.

Maybe it was a god. Maybe it was a being that could change the Dungeon's structure or approach a Dungeon when it started to form.....

“Ha-ah.”

It didn't matter if he believed it or not. He was tempted by the offer, and Lee-sahng-ho had come down to Daegoo.

He got off the car, then looked for the entrance of the Jookjun station where Yunhwee had died.

“Shit.”

If he thought about it, everything started to go wrong starting from here. If he didn't send Yunhwee to Daegoo to inquire about Kahng-woojin...

In front of the entrance to the subway station, there was a small statue of Kahng-woojin.

[Admiration For the Hero Who Stopped the Calamity.]

Daegoo's local government wasn't responsible for this. The people from the neighborhood footed the cost of erecting this small statue. When Lee-sahngho saw it, he felt swear words rise up his throat.

Woojin was a hero to the locals, but he was Lee-sahngho's nemesis.

Woojin had ruined his business, killed his dongsang, and was the main cause for why his guild was in a free-fall.

Lee-sahngho stood in front of the Dungeon entrance.

The employee from the Management Bureau stared at him oddly. There were users inside the Dungeon, so the barrier was up.

“Hey. It's dangerous over here. If you don't have an appointment, then please back off.”

Even the employees from the Management Bureau couldn't recognize him? He was the guild master of the 3 Great Guilds of Korea.

Annoyance washed over him. Anger suddenly blossomed in his chest.

“Uh uh?”

The employee guarding the Dungeon Entrance, and the security personnel standing to the side started to float up into the air at the same time. Supernatural powers were moving them and they had no control over their body. Their startled eyes headed towards Lee-sahngho, who they guessed was the culprit.

“You don't know who I am?”

It felt as if they had been submerged within water without any protective gears, feeling the pressure increase. The pain was making their heads hurt. Their self preservation instinct twitched as they finally figured out the identity of man in front of them.

“H... Hwarang guild master.”

Lee-sahngho released the psychokinesis imprisoning the three.

After falling to the floor, the public employee took in a deep breath. Finally, after regaining his senses, he asked a question.

“W... what business brought you here...”

“.....”

Yes. Why did he come here?

Was it for power? Was it because he didn't have strength to extract his revenge?

How funny. He might have come here after an unknown illusion had tricked him. Moreover, he wanted to believe in the word of the illusion. The whole situation made him want to laugh.

“Nothing much.”

Lee-sahngho turned his back towards them.

Even though, he was in a bad spot, how could he act like a madman? Wasn't he acting like a cultist, who lost his sense of judgement?

It happened when Lee-sahngho was about to walk away.

[Koo kook. I like you.]

The illusion appeared once again in front of him, and it caused his eyes to shake.

[If you follow me, I'll give you power.]

The illusion turned into white smoke once again. It brushed by Lee-sahngho's ear as it headed towards the Dungeon.

The illusion disappeared as if it had been absorbed by the Dungeon. Lee-sahngho rubbed his eyes.

'What the hell?'

Was he really bewitched by a ghost?

Lee-sahngho was shaking his head when something amazing happened to the Dungeon.

Pah-paht!

A pillar of light rose out of the Dungeon, and it shot up into the sky.

"It's a Dungeon Reset!"

"Huhk. It's for real."

This was a Dungeon located at an intersection. The various people walking by and the Roused nearby was approaching to look at the spectacle.

This incident was too timely to call it a coincidence, so Lee-sahngho's eyes fluttered.

"Hello? This is Jookjuhn Station..."

Time was of the utmost importance when a Dungeon Reset happened. From this point on, there was 30 days left to clear it. The public employee had been frantically talking into the phone when the receiver exploded. He couldn't complete his duty.

"What the hell are you doing!"

The public employee didn't even need to look around his surrounding. The public employee and the guards rose into the sky, and then their heads were rammed into the wall.

Puh-uh-uhk!

A long trail of blood flowed down the wall, accompanying a sound like that of watermelons breaking. Then, the three bodies fell to the floor.

“Power.”

As if he was being pulled by a magnet, Lee-sahngho headed towards the reset Dungeon.

He didn't care what the Dungeon Energy and what rank this Dungeon was. He didn't even think about whether he could realistically clear the Dungeon as a Rank B.

“Revenge.”

Something in there was willing to give him power.

He didn't care if he became some cultist. He wanted power.

A human from earth had let go his sense of judgement and passed through the Dungeon entrance.

Chapter 91

Heading Towards the End (4)

'What did I just do?'

Lee-sahngho became surprised after he entered the Dungeon.

He belatedly realized what he had done. He felt a rush of regret, but it was too late to turn back now. After the barrier formed, he wouldn't be able to just walk back out.

The only way was to clear the Dungeon and find the Return Stone.

[No. If you accept my offer, you can get out of here easily.]

"W... who are you?"

[Koo-koo-kook.]

The laughter rang inside his head, giving Lee-sahngho the shivers.

[If you want power, then come to me.]

Jeeeeeng.

In front of Lee-sahngho's eyes, a red portal was formed.

'It formed even though I hadn't killed all the basic monsters?'

The portal that gave access to the true high rank Dungeon appeared only when all the monsters inside the subway station was killed. However, as soon as he entered the Dungeon, the portal had formed.

To be precise, the mysterious voice had created it.

Unless Lee-sahngho was an idiot, it was hard not to notice what had happened.

'This being is capable of controlling the Dungeon.'

He had no idea, who this was.

He wasn't sure if this being was a god, a devil, or an alien from outer space. However, he knew this being could control the Dungeon, and he had no idea why he was called here.

The only thing he was sure about was the fact that he had no choice but to pass through the portal.

He erased any thoughts about clearing the Dungeon. There was a 'Being' enticing him with the promise of 'Power'. All he had to look forward to was making a deal.

Weeeeng.

As he passed through the portal, he heard a buzz, after which he felt his body becoming weightless. It felt as if he was being transported to a different Dimension.

He was a Rank B Roused, so he had experienced clearing high rank Dungeons several times. He wasn't wholly unfamiliar with this sensation.

However, the scene that unfolded in front of his eyes was unfamiliar and strange.

Hweeeeng.

He saw a large castle of ice being buffeted by cold winds.

The land was too desolate to call it a field; it was filled with white snow. The road headed towards a hill where a large ice castle existed on top of it.

Lee-sahngho automatically shrunk backwards as he saw the domineering view.

The cold wasn't the only reason why his body was shaking.

When he was about to swallow his saliva, some unknown thing had exited the castle and started running towards Lee-sahngho.

Koong, koong, koong!

The large beast's footfall made the ground shake, and Lee-sahngho's heart raced faster.

Lee-sahngho's speciality was psychokinesis. He was too weak to be called a physical type Roused.

“Ooh-ook...”

He knew that an existence he couldn't handle was approaching him, so Lee-sahngho automatically let out a moan.

“Koo-roo-roo-roong.”

The large being had a curved back and was covered in thick white fur. It was an ice troll, and it stopped right in front of Lee-sahngho, standing at three times the size of a person.

“Koong koong. Koong.”

“.....”

Its nose flared to take in his scent. There was a horrible stench coming from its mouth, but Lee-sahngho didn't move a finger. The corrupt being probably didn't call him here so he could be eaten by an ice troll.

“Koo-roo-roong.”

When it turned around, Lee-sahngho saw what was being dragged by the ice troll. It looked like a mix between a carriage and a sled. It turned its back to Lee-sahngho after showing him the ride.

After receiving the clear message, Lee-sahngho took a deep breath and got on the sled.

“Koo-roo-roong.”

Steam started to come out of its nose as it ran towards the castle with the sled in tow. The castle was so large that it gave the illusion they were already close to it. However, it took awhile for them to arrive, even though the sled was moving at an incredible speed.

When he stood in front of the castle's door, it looked to be about 10 meters tall. He could guess the size of the owner that used this door regularly.

When the castle door opened, he followed the ice troll without a moment of rest.

When he looked around his surrounding, he could see a good number of ice trolls, and he saw couple large monster that looked like a woolly mammoth.

After Lee-sangho walked for a fathomless amount of time, he arrived at the heart of the castle.

It look to be the residence of the king. The place was sparkling since it had been carved out of ice. It was an excessively fancy castle.

In the center of the large hall, there was a stairway leading up high. At the zenith, the being who had call him was sitting on a throne.

“You really came.”

The being was made entirely out of ice.

He looked like an ice golem, but his size and shape was similar to that of a human. But even if he was of similar height, his presence made it clear that he wasn't a human.

Lee-sahngko got on his knee out of his own volition and lowered his head.

When the being saw this, he stood up from his ice throne.

“You are quite quick on the uptake.”

As if he liked what he saw, the being descended the steps one at a time, then stood in front of Lee-sahngko.

“Raise your head.”

“Yes.”

Lee-sahngko couldn't control his body from shaking as he raised his head. He felt it all over his body. The ice sculpture-like being in front of him could kill Lee-sahngko with the tip of his finger...

Kahng-woojin, who had beaten him to a pulp in front of the camera, couldn't even be compared to this being.

"I welcome you to my Dimensional Domain."

"....."

"Koo-kook. You don't have to tremble. I wanted to give you an offer, so I sent a messenger to you."

A white specter appeared and disappeared next to the being made out of ice.

"I'll give you the power you want..."

Give him power... He liked those words. It was the word he had wished for, but he knew there were no free meals in this world. His desire for power was used as bait to bring him here.

"What do you want?"

"Koo-koo-kook."

The being laughed.

"This is why I like humans."

Humans were a species that understood—if one coveted something above their station, then there was a cost involved. This was why they were a very good prey and a good source of energy.

"I want to occupy Earth, but earth can't accept me yet. It is too early."

"....."

Lee-sahngho listened in silence. He had no idea what this being was talking about.

Still, it felt as if he had become privy to an incredible secret no one knew about on earth.

"I won't lose good hunting grounds to those beneath me."

The being turned his back towards Lee-sahngho, then he turned to look at the throne he had been sitting in.

There were 25 stairs.

He held the glorious title of being Trahnet's 25th great lord.

Iello.

"I'm not like that stupid Rashmode. I avoid using an unstable link."

Trahnet's 72 commanders. They were the 72 great lords who held their own thrones.

Each throne were numbered by Steps from 1 to 72, and above them was the absolute monarch... Everyone needed a hunting ground.

Earth was being synchronized, so the energy level would increase. The increased amount of energy will allow a link to form for the 1st Step. As the power on Earth increases, the higher Steps could prey on earth.

Iello didn't like this at all.

He won't be able to link with Earth as fast as the great lords of the lower Steps. Still, he didn't want to be late in linking with Earth, so he needed to bring changes to Earth.

"You just have to cause trouble to your heart's content."

Iello turned back once again, raising his hand towards the kneeling Lee-sahngho's head. As if he was learning an ability using a Skill Book, new knowledge was absorbed into Lee-sahngho's head.

'T... this is...'

Dungeon Break.

Iello needed exactly 30 days before he could use the Return Stone, but he could hasten it by using the human from earth. Lee-sahngho would be his vector.

He will open a path where the monsters will be able to pass through to earth.

"Ah. I'll have to give you some power. It seems you have a massive grudge against that troublesome Immortal."

Iello broke off a fragment of ice from his shoulder and gave it to Lee-sahngho. Lee-sahngho received it with reverence, and the fragment that looked like an ice flower was absorbed into his body in an instant.

'H... how can this be!'

He felt it. The overflowing energy was rising inside him like a dragon. He developed new abilities and his knowledge expanded.

'God... These beings are gods.'

If Asgard was real, then would it be like this? Should he call this the world of the gods?

The gods were trying to descend to earth.

The stupid people of earth was unnecessarily resisting against the gods.

These beings will eventually descend.

Lee-sahngho could feel it. No matter how they struggled humans wouldn't be able to stop them.

He'll become the god's envoy.

He'll get his revenge, and he'll bring destruction.

<You've become the vassal of 25th great lord, Iello.>

Iello smiled.

He probably wasn't the only great lord who had sent out a messenger.

The synchronization of earth will be accelerated, and he'll materialize on earth before those below him gained more power. He would defend his throne, and he will also challenge the higher thrones.

"Do as you please, my servant."

A blue light rolled across Lee-sahngoh's eyes.



He had already ridden the Titan guild's private plane, so he greeted the familiar pilot and flight crews. However, Woojin frowned when he saw a familiar woman inside.

“Why are you here?”

“.....”

Before the Holy Maiden could reply, a black smoke formed next to Woojin. Kiba materialized.

[Evil bitch!]

Kiba let out a yell, and his voice rang inside the plane. Kiba was about to charge immediately with his axe to cleave her into two, but Woojin restrained him.

“Don't come out before I call for you.”

Goo-roo-roo-roo-roong.

Kiba's rough breath pressed against the Holy Maiden. The Holy Maiden's face became haggard, but she didn't back down. Woojin's consciousness was connected to the Summon Room, and he sighed when he felt his Death Knights protest.

“Go back in.”

Immortal's command demanded absolute obedience.

Kiba didn't hide his killing intent as he glared at Melody. He changed back into black smoke, and he was absorbed into Woojin.

“.....”

Some unknown and frightening being had appeared, so the flight attendants shook as they pressed their bodies against the wall of the plane. The Holy Knights, who had accompanied the Holy Maiden, was frozen in nervousness.

The killing intent and pressure shown in an instant had made the Holy Knights, who were Rank A and Rank B, freeze in place.

“You are also going to the Middle East?”

“Yes...”

“My familiars don't like you. Why are you following after me?”

“...the goddess gave an oracle. She said for me to assist the Immortal...”

“Ah-oh. Why did that big sis say such a thing?”

Woojin frowned.

What kind of Holy Maiden assists a fucking Necromancer?

“I... I'm sorry.”

Melody lowered her head.

This being had faced gods. Melody had no choice but to be careful in front of the Immortal. She was just a servant who could hear the goddess' voice.

“Uh-whew. It's ok. Why should you be sorry?”

The Holy Maiden had to do whatever the goddess said.

Goddess Aria was the foul one. The Holy Maiden Melody wasn't at fault.

“Just don't get close to me.”

“Yes.”

“Moreover, don't use any Holy Magic around me.”

“Yes...”

As if it wasn't enough, Woojin once again gave another warning.

"I'm serious. Don't use it. If your Holy Powers mistakenly hit these guys, they will perish."

"Yes. I'll be careful."

The Death Knights were still yelling their grievance inside the Summon Room, so Woojin frowned.

Woojin didn't mind the fact that she was here.

Bibi and Dolsae was also fine, since one was a devil and the other was a golem. However, his Undead Familiars hated the Holy Maiden.

"Eh-whew. Whatever"

Woojin sat in his seat, then he put on his seatbelt.

The Holy Maiden sat far away from him, and she put on her seatbelt. Then she prayed to her goddess.

'Oh goddess. Please look over me if you feel sorry for me.'

She liked the fact that Alphen would be rescued. Everything was great.

However, she had to follow Woojin when she wasn't entirely welcomed. It made her future seem dark, and her heart was already fluttering from nervousness.

When she shrank away from Woojin, the Holy Knights also started to eye Woojin warily.

"Ah. I should have uploaded some drama."

Woojin felt regret, but it was too late.

The plane left the tarmac and headed towards the Middle East.

Chapter 92

Wrath of the Desert (1)

Bagram Airfield, Afghanistan.

Commanding general David Gates got off the phone with the Minister of National Defense and gathered his officers.

There was only one topic to discuss within this meeting.

“Currently, a Korean citizen Roused is on the Titan guild's private plane, and he has information on the missile terrorist attack carried out on the US soil.”

“It must be that Korean who stopped the terrorist attack.”

“That's right. He wants to track down and take revenge on the people responsible for the attack, and he is requesting help from our military.”

The chief of staff immediately asked his question after hearing general David's words.

“I know he is a Roused, but warfare is dangerous. If we don't work well together, the joint operation with the civilians will put us in more danger.”

He was basically saying a stupid ally was more dangerous than the enemies. It would be more dangerous if this Roused put too much trust in his puny abilities.

There was no guarantee that a Roused wouldn't die from a bullet. The battlefield was a place where a bullet could kill you from far away.

“Mmm. This was sent by the Titan guild.”

At the commander's word, the aide played the video.

“Oh, Shit.”



After Woojin and the people from the Titan guild got off the private plane, they were immediately directed towards the commander's room. General David gave a brief greeting, and at Woojin's request, they immediately started planning for the operation.

"How did you get this information?"

This was the information they were most curious about. US Intelligence Agencies were still trying very hard to find information on the people behind the missile terrorist attack, yet how did Woojin know all about this?

"Ah well."

Woojin called forth Al Assad, who had become a Death Knight. His Loyalty and Trust was still weak, so he still needed to use a considerable amount of Control. However, he had been able to lower it to 80. Woojin asked Al Assad a question.

"Hey. Tell them all about it."

[I received a request from a broker that I frequently had business with. It was to assassinate a Korean Roused...]

Woojin's familiar was an assassin who had tried to kill him. Everyone inside the planning room looked at him strangely, but Woojin paid no attention to it.

"Who was it?"

[It was an Iranian businessman. I don't know his name, but if I see his picture...]

At Al Assad's request, the general brought up a list. It had photos of businessmen who hailed from Iran. Al Assad pointed to one of them.

"Hmm. This person is Nasser Saatchi. This man sells weapons to both the government and the rebels. He is on our watchlist."

[He serves as a go-between for various ventures that has the potential to be profitable.]

Woojin looked at the picture.

It was a picture of a Middle Eastern businessman named Nasser Saatchi. If he shook this guy down, then he would be able to find out who ordered his assassination.

“Where can I find him?”

“Whoa. Don't be in such a rush.”

Woojin acted as if he was about to head out to immediately look for this man, but David dissuaded him.

“Our target is identified now. We'll tell you after we establish the personnel for this operation.”

Now that the information was out in the open, they wanted Woojin to wait a little bit. This person was on the US army's watchlist, but on the surface, he was a legit businessman.

Still, this person of interest instigated a terror attack on the US soil.

They had enough probable cause to be able to capture him using the might of the army.

Still, if they wanted to catch him before he realized something was wrong, they needed a proper plan.

“I have a way to monitor the bastard without him noticing anything. You just have to guide me to a location where I can see him with my eyes.”

They didn't have to set up a meeting to draw this man out. Woojin just had to walk by this man within his field vision, and he'll be able to attach Ggaebi to him. After several days, Woojin would find out the pattern of his movements. He would be able to find the location where he conducted his business, and correspondingly, where he stored the information regarding all his past deals.

“Won't we be able to learn more information doing it my way? What do you think?”

“.....”

Woojin's suggestion was intriguing.

If they arrested Nasser at the word of this strange Skeleton Knight, the US might

receive international criticism should there be no evidence connecting the man to the terrorist attack.

Woojin would be able to provide them with more detailed information.

Woojin had no other ulterior motives.

If he couldn't learn the information about who had ordered his assassination from Nasser, then he would run into a wall in his pursuit. This was why he was paying closer attention to this operation.

'I don't know who order it, but that person should watch out.'

For a brief moment, David thought about Woojin's suggestion. Then, he answered.

"All right. Let's implement the plan together"

The mission was named [Putting a Bell around a Cat's Neck]. Woojin was inserted into a portion of the mission called [Lick the Shadow].



Peshwar, Pakistan.

Booooong.

A disguised Woojin was riding in the backseat of a taxi, and he was sitting next to an American intelligence office named Rachel Park. Her Korean name was lieutenant Park-oohnji. They looked like a typical Asian couple on a vacation as they headed towards a hotel.

"Why are you so nervous?"

"Hoo-ooh. This is the first time I've been on such a mission."

Rachel held a post that placed her far away from the battlefield. However, she had been inserted into this operation since she was a Korean-American. Her appearance didn't clash with Woojin, so they could act naturally as a couple. It was a good disguise to travel around in.

In the case of an unexpected situation, a support team was following behind the taxi in disguise.

"Just think of it as a vacation. Look how great... I guess it isn't that great over here."

Woojin had pointed out the window, and he could see ruined buildings. There were soldiers securing the surrounding with children nearby. Woojin's words trailed off when he saw the people in the streets.

"There was a suicide bombing here not too long ago."

She was an intelligence officer, so she was very well versed in the terrorist activities in Afghanistan and Pakistan.

"Does this happen a lot over here?"

"It happens quite frequently. Even a single terrorist attack in our country would cause an uproar, but it is just part of the daily life here."

"Hmmm."

He couldn't help but smirk at the view of the streets. He felt the energy of the battlefield. It felt strange. He might be able to delude himself into thinking he was back on Alphen.

'Of course, he is composed.'

Rachel swallowed her saliva as she saw Woojin, who was smiling. She had gone over every intel they had on Kahng-woojin. Woojin's Rank was too high to call him a run of the mill Roused, and his decisive actions were quite unusual as well.

Her mission was to guide Woojin towards the restaurant in a hotel where Nasser Saatchi was scheduled to visit. She also had another important mission of keeping Woojin, who was known to be hot headed and impulsive, in check.

"We'll be arriving soon. Please refrain from doing anything eye-catching or provoking."

"Don't worry about it."

After Woojin and Rachel entered the hotel, they checked into their appointed room.

Rachel opened her suitcase and started setting up the communication equipments. Then, she put a small earpiece into her ear.

She contacted the operations vehicle with the support team in it. After she finished checking her communications, she carefully waited for her target to show up.

After a moment.

[Chi-jeek. The target is approaching the restaurant.]

“He's here.”

“Let's go.”

Woojin and Rachel headed down to the restaurant. After leisurely ordering their meal, Rachel whispered towards Woojin.

“He is sitting in the 3rd table near the back window. He is wearing a sky blue shirt.”

Woojin peeked a glance, and he saw a face that matched the photo.

‘Stick to him, Ggaebi.’

[Yes.]

Ggaebi, who was attached to his shadow, moved to Nasser Saatchi's shadow. After a moment, the food they ordered arrived. Woojin used his fork to bring the food up to his mouth and started chewing. It was a chicken and shrimp dish. The spices were a little bit on the strong side, but the taste was to his liking.

“This is quite good.”

Rachel asked in a bit of an impatient manner as she looked at Woojin.

“While we have the time, please activate the surveillance mechanism.”

“I already did.”

When? She hadn't noticed anything at all.

“Let's head out after eating this.”

“...Understood.”

Rachel hadn't noticed anything, even though she was right in front of him. She decided Nasser, who was leisurely having a meal, wouldn't have noticed anything.

They didn't look at the target again. Woojin enjoyed the meal as if he was really on vacation. It allowed Rachel to shed the nervousness she felt from her first field mission.

When she realized his constant leisurely manner wasn't a false front, Rachel felt a strange emotion inside.

“Bring the equipments. I'll wait below.”

“Why don't we go up together?”

“It isn't necessary for both of us to go up.”

“There are some things only two people can do together.”

Woojin smirked at Rachel's provocation.

“Even if you'll have to lay down your life?”

She decided Woojin was turning down her offer, so Rachel shrugged her shoulders. This was the most cut-throat rejection she had ever received.

“Too bad.”

“Go do what you have to do and come back.”

“Yes. Please wait here for a moment.”

While Rachel went up to the room, Woojin walked into the lobby.

The hotel was well maintained, and the street in front of the hotel was clean. The people weren't in extreme fear about the war or the terrorist attacks.

"It much better over here compared to Alphen."

That place was hell, where he had to worry daily about staying alive.

Woojin stood there doing nothing when dirty orphans gathered around him.

They started babbling words at him, but Woojin didn't feel the need to drink the Language Drug to understand what they were yelling. He could tell by their body language that they were fiercely begging for money.

'Kids always gets the shortest end of the stick no matter the location.'

It was very hard for children to survive after losing their guardians. Woojin took out his wallet, and he gave each of them money as he looked into their clear eyes.

The children spoke in words he couldn't understand. They gave their thanks as they moved away from him. Woojin spotted a little girl in the alleyway, and she came running up to him.

"Ho-oh."

There wasn't a single speck of dirt on her soul. She had a clear soul.

Maybe, it was because she was a child. Her soul was more clear and innocent than Do-jiwon. Even in a war-torn battle field, clear souls were still blooming.

Woojin was suddenly in better spirits, so he smiled.

The little girl was short as her height only reached his waist. The smile she gave Woojin was very pretty.

"Hello."

The child bowed her head, and she respectfully put both her hands out. Woojin laughed as he opened his wallet. Then an out-of-place noise tickled his ears.

Tick.

As Woojin was about to frown, the bomb hidden within the child's clothes exploded.

Chapter 93

Wrath of the Desert (2)

Kwahhng!

The first thing he saw was the scraps of meat scattering from the explosion.

Then, his Spirit Armor activated and the barrier of souls formed to block the shock wave.

It didn't block repulsive force, therefore Woojin's body was flung backwards, after which it was embedded into the hotel's wall.

The explosive must have been quite powerful, since three cars that had been passing by Woojin was engulfed in the explosion. The overturned vehicles brought on a secondary explosion.

Poo-shee-shee-shee.

The dust from the crushed bricks settled on top of Woojin's face.

He hadn't suffered any damages from the explosion. He hadn't receive any damage from being thrown against the wall either. The Spirit Armor had blocked everything.

Since the dust from the bricks weren't counted as attack, the Spirit Armor hadn't activated.

His body was fine, but he did receive some shock to his psyche. Woojin dumbly laid on the ground.

'Jeez.'

It had only been couple months since he had returned to earth. However, everything had turned out like this.

He welcomed it, but at the same time, he felt bitter about it.

The clear soul floated up in front of Woojin's eyes.

Her heart had been beating only a moment ago... Now, not even a corpse remained of the girl with the ridiculously clear soul.

[It hurts, ahjushi.]

It must be painful.

[I'm scared, ahjushi.]

Color started dyeing into the girl's clear soul by small increments. It was as if a black ink was dropped on her soul. It turned gray, then black. It started to turn into a darker shade of black...

[Save me, ahjushi.]

He was tormented by his inability to do anything.

Who would want such a speckless and clear soul to fall into being an evil spirit?

Woojin wasn't the only one who had been swept up in the explosion. There were already several casualties. The girl unknowingly had murdered people.

[Ahjushi...]

The girl's soul was stained black and collapsed into itself. The soul had changed into a round evil spirit that started to circle around Woojin.

[Please save me.]

The evil spirit hung around him, but Woojin could only leave it alone.

How could he save this delicate evil spirit?

Woojin had no choice but to leave it alone.

The only thing he could do was to destroy it.

He couldn't revert it back to its original form.

'It's my first evil spirit on earth.'

The evil spirits who appeared in his dreams had increased by one, so he didn't attach too much importance to that fact.

Woojin was angry, because for the first time he returned to earth, he had felt a terrible experience that was comparable to what he had gone through on the hell-like Alphen.

"He's over here. Hurry up. Bring a board, so we can carry him."

The disguised US soldiers ran quickly towards Woojin to save him, but Woojin stood up as he dusted himself off.

"A... are you ok?"

"The perpetrator?"

"He killed himself."

What a tenacious bastard. No, he should be called a crazy bastard instead of tenacious.

"Let's go to the vehicle."

"What? Yes."

The explosion happened right in front of him, yet he was ok. The US soldiers were a bit intimidated by this Rank AA Roused who continued to show a calm exterior.

Woojin got on the van that acted as the command vehicle. Soon, Rachel got in the car with a surprised expression on her face. Rachel looked over Woojin as she asked a question.

"Are you ok?"

"Were they aiming for me?"

Woojin didn't seem to be in a good mood, so Rachel immediately answered his question.

"No. There were 7 simultaneous explosions in the surrounding."

“So 7 children died.”

“.....”

Aside from the children who had been used to carry the explosives, there were a lot of casualties Woojin didn't care about people killing other people. There will always be conflicts, and fights always resulted in casualties.

Still, they were using children who had nothing to do with anything...

He was in a foul mood. What was so different about humans and Trahnet's pawns?

“Let's return.”

“Are you ok?”

“I'm not ok.”

“Are you hurt somewhere...”

“No.”

He wasn't hurt. He was calm yet she felt a disharmonious feeling from him.

He look too unscathed, as if nothing had happened.

Was he hurt in a location where it wasn't visible?

“Don't talk to me.”

“.....”

“I'm in a foul mood.”

“.....”

Woojin crossed his arms then he looked out the window.

It had been a while. No, this was the first time he had felt such a feeling after returning to earth.

Some sticky and muddy feeling was fouling his mood, and he felt a pure rage rising up from inside of him.



After a day, they were back in the Bagram Air Base. All the officers were gathered in the room.

“It'll be impossible.”

“Really? Then I'll go by myself.”

The military officers were at a loss for words at Woojin's ambition.

Woojin wanted to end the war by himself? This was a war even they could not end.

This wasn't a problem that could be solved with firepower or manpower.

“It's useless to fight them head on. The leadership group would just go into hiding.”

“Hoo-ooh.”

Woojin frowned.

The more he thought about it the more frustration he felt towards the terrorists.

The line between civilians and the rebels were ambiguous. A man, who looked like a civilian, could suddenly start shooting.

If one wanted to squeeze the pus out of an abscess, one basically had to amputate the whole arm.

If one wanted to round up all the bastards that were in hiding, one would have also have to kill all the blameless civilians.

“Try coming up with an idea.”

“What is there to think about? It is an impossible task.”

It was Rogers, who spoke.

If they had a way to end the war, they would have already done so. Currently, all they could do was to stop the influence of the terrorists from expanding. No, their continuous pullout from the region meant already 30% of Afghan's territory was occupied once again by the rebels.

"The government is talking about dispatching additional forces. Why don't we wait for that? I empathize with your anger, but this isn't something you can handle on your own."

General David's words didn't register in Woojin's ears.

"I don't care if you guys accompany me or not. I'm going by myself."

"What are you going to do when you get to the territory held by the insurgent group? Are you going to kill them all? Do you want the title of being the most evil terrorist?"

"Sssoop."

Was his name Rogers? Why is this bastard keep trying to get on his nerve?

"If you aren't going to help, then stay out of this. I don't need any help."

Woojin exited the command room.

He would wait four days until Ggaebi gathered enough information. Once he found out who was behind his assassination attempt, he would kill that bastard. Then he would sweep the insurgency group that was carrying out the terrorist attacks.

He didn't have a plan, but the end result wouldn't change.

As Woojin exited the room, the mood inside the command room became heated.

"Are you just going to leave him alone like that? A Roused will be massacring the civilians."

What defined a terrorist?

One became a terrorist when one killed the powerless without justification. In a flash, Woojin would become the most famous terrorist.

"Go after him. Try stopping him."

At the general's words, Rogers let out a sigh then he exited the command room. They had even asked for help from the Holy Maiden. However, she said the Air Base will be smashed into pieces if they got in Woojin's way. It put the command group in a foul mood.

"Hey."

Woojin stopped and turned around when he heard someone call after him.

Did they say this man was the leader of a special Roused team within this base?

"Do you have a death wish? Why are you keep trying to get on my nerves?"

"I'll help you."

"What?"

"I'm not talking about facing them head on. If you want to assassinate the high ranking members of the terrorist group, I can help you get close to them."

Woojin smiled. Finally, he heard some welcoming news.

"Speak."

"I'll set it up, so they will kidnap you."

Oh-ho. What a refreshing idea?

Woojin's eyebrows arched.



After one week.

Dul-koo-dung, dul-koo-dung.

Woojin's two hands were bound, and he was being transported somewhere with a stinky mask over his face.

“Hook hook hook...”

Woojin wasn't the only one being treated like a luggage. There were four more people with him.

“My god. Please save us.”

The one mumbling was named Roman.

He used to illegally smuggle weapons. He failed to toe the line between the government and the insurgent group, so he had been singled out. Woojin hung around Roman's vicinity, so he was kidnapped alongside Roman.

‘Ggaebi’

He called Ggaebi, who was attached to Woojin's shadow. As his senses revved up, Ggaebi's consciousness woke up.

Woojin used his Points to increase Ggaebi to level 50. Ggaebi's level would continually rise on its own in battle, so he had planned on saving the points. However, he had no choice but to use his points since he needed Ggaebi's abilities right now.

<Lv 50 Shadow Phantom><Familiar : Ggaebi>

Through one's shadow, a parasite ghost of the host will be summoned.

It will read the emotions and gather information about the host. If the host is a corpse, then the ghost would be able to control it. If the corpse is revived with Resurrection, then the ghost can bring out a little bit more of the corpse's original ability.

The Required Control decreased depending on the Summoner's Loyalty and Trust. The summoned being that was controlled by the Summoner may be reformed into a true companion.

Number of Shadow : 6

Possessed Skills : Shadow Multiplication, Expanded Senses, Soul Exchange, Shadow Movement

Corpse Amplification : +50%

Needed Control 1(-99 Loyalty, -99 Trust)

Every 10 levels increased the Shadow Multiplication. Currently, Ggaebi could attach a total of 6 Shadows to people. He attached one to Nasser Saatchi, so he had 5 Shadows at his disposal.

The Expanded Senses wasn't something used on humans. It allowed Ggaebi to gather information as he hid within the shadow of a building. As the name indicated, Soul Exchange allowed Woojin to switch soul with Ggaebi. Shadow Movement allowed Woojin to become a shadow, and he could move between the shadows of humans and objects.

'Don't cause any accidents. Just stay put.'

[Koo-koo. All right, master.]

Ggaebi was feeling good at the thought of possessing his master's body, and his voice disturbed Woojin. Woojin became a Shadow, and he opened his eyes. He could see 5 people tossed in the back of an old truck like luggage.

There were 4 insurgents. One drove, and another sat besides him. Two were in the back to keep an eye on the cargo. There were 3 vehicles following the truck.

'Let's skip these small fries.'

He didn't get captured so he could vent his anger on these guys. Woojin planned on pulling out the root of the insurgent group. Only then would his mounting anger be dissolved by a little bit.

The rebel's truck stopped and Woojin's Shadow headed inside the building.

He'd rather find the middle management than the low ranking officers. Moreover, he would prefer to find the leaders than the members of the middle management.....

He multiplied his Shadow to attach it to people that looked important.

It took less than 20 hours before Woojin approached the leadership group of the rebels.

'It's these bastards.'

If he killed all the important figures in the insurgent group's command structure, the rebels would fall into pieces. Then he'll just leave the rest to the US army.

Woojin hid within the shadow of the rebel leader and mined information in earnest.

Woojin remembered the face of the people as if he was taking a picture with his mind. He made a hit list in a calm and orderly manner.

[Master. May I do as I please?]

'Huh? Why?'

Ggaebi's consciousness had been silent up until now. Woojin replied with an ill-temper. He didn't like the fact that someone else was in charge of his body right now. In the past, Ggaebi occasionally used his body to carry out massacres.

[They are executing people with a firing squad. Master's head is close to getting a hole in his head.]

'.....'

He had heard that the insurgent group didn't kill their hostages immediately after capture, but it seemed that wasn't always the case.

'Let's switch.'

[Koo-kook. All right, master.]

Ggaebi could continue to gather information. Ggaebi couldn't use Shadow Movement unlike when Woojin was in control. Still, the Shadow was attached to the rebel leader. At the very least, he didn't have to worry about losing that bastard.

Pah-paht.

Since Ggabei's Shadow and his real body was separated by long distance, the Soul Exchange disoriented Woojin for a moment.

A sack was no longer covering his face so he could see his surrounding.

Hoo-ooh-ooh-oohng.

The insurgents were lined up in the desert where heat was being emitted. Woojin and the other hostages were tied up and on their knees.

“I punish you in the name of our god. Revere our god.”

One of the insurgents held a camcorder and he was recording the execution. Woojin finished assessing his situation.

“There are 25 rebels and 18 captives.

Moreover, he could see their base from across the desert. This was where they kept their captives, and it doubled as a training facility.

It was a place where the newly recruited insurgents could practice killing people.

He looked over the hostages, and Roman was missing. The people who were captured with Roman were considered useless, so they were being killed outright.

Woojin stood up in place.

“God my ass.”

Cable ties were fastened on both his wrists and ankles. Woojin wouldn't be able to walk or take out his weapon.

There was a reason why the insurgents looked at Woojin in a leisurely manner.

“How many have you killed?”

A veteran rebel, who had been making a speech in front of the camera, responded to him.

“Hoong. You are quite fluent in our language.”

Of course. These Arabs had so many dialects to their language, so he had to drink numerous Language Drugs.

“Several thousand has received the punishment of our god. I've killed several hundred with these hands.”

He was boasting about killing people in front of the Immortal. How funny.

No, it was cute.

“Ah, I can feel them.”

He felt them. He felt the restless souls buried beneath the desert.

There were those captured as hostages, and the negotiation for their ransom had broken down. There were those killed as examples or for fun. Woojin could feel their vengeful spirits.

“Only a god can give a divine punishment.”

“I am the messenger of god.”

The word of the insurgent wearing the keffiyeh was funny to Woojin.

“Messenger of god...”

“You should feel honor from being killed by me.”

The veteran rebel pulled the trigger without hesitating in the slightest.

Teeng!

The bullet bounced off the Spirit Armor in front of Woojin. The number of souls possessed by him decreased by one.

“What... what the hell?”

Tah-ahng, tahng!

The veteran shot continuously, but the barrier was in the way. He took a step back when his attack was ineffective.

“H... he's a Roused! Shoot him!”

Ta-da-da-da-da-dahng!

Several dozen bullets was shot towards Woojin, but none of them could injure him.

"You bastards don't even deserve a punishment from god."

This wasn't a punishment. This was revenge.

The aggrieved vindictive spirits would be taking their revenge into their own hands.

The cable tie broke easily when Woojin tensed his body with strength.

Woojin immediately released his magic.

Pah-pah-pah-paht!

It was as if the sands of the desert were being bombarded. Skeleton Soldiers slowly started to rise up.

The captured US hostages, businessmen, tourists, civilian walking in the street, the hostages killed and thrown away in the desert.....

All of them rose up. There were over 500 of them and increasing. Woojin replenished his magic as he raised more and more Skeleton Soldiers. At the same time, he summoned his Death Knights.

They were still very low level.

The average level was 8. Each level allowed 10 soldiers to be under the command of the Death Knight, so one could command 80 soldiers. Thus, he needed 4240 Skeleton Soldiers, but Woojin wasn't too worried about it. The enemy's corpses would reinforce his personnel.

All the Skeletons were auto-assigned under the 53 Death Knights.

When the tied hostages suddenly saw a massive number of Skeletons show up, they started crawling away like worms on the floor. The rebels didn't even think about firing back with their guns. They quickly ran away towards their base.

Woojin looked at them with indifferent eyes.

"Sweep them all away."

[As master wishes!]

Kiba and the other Death Knights simultaneously summoned and got on their Phantom Steeds. Then, Skeleton Soldiers followed after them as they charged. It was like soldiers charging behind their generals.

The festival of blood had begun in the desert.

Chapter 94

Wrath of the Desert (3)

“The monsters are coming.”

“Get ready to fire!”

The terrorists were optimized for travel since they had to be ready to run away from the bombardments. The vehicles were equipped with various weapons, including machine guns.

Boo-roo-roo-roong.

Black smog was emitted as the ignitions were started. As the vehicles took a sharp turn, they pointed their vehicles towards the desert outside the base.

“Shoot them!”

Too-doo-doo-doo-doo-doo-doo.

“Kiehhhhk.”

Several hundred bullets flew through the air, striking the Skeleton Soldiers. When one hit the Skeleton's skulls by luck, the Skeleton Soldier was destroyed. However, this only occurred to a small fraction of the Skeleton Soldiers.

Moreover, the Death Knights riding on top of the Phantom Steeds didn't receive any damage.

“Bring the rocket launcher.”

A henchman quickly brought a RPG-7, aiming it at a Phantom Steed before firing.

Pee-shoooooong!

The warhead cut through the air towards a short Death Knight with an imposing

presence. His Phantom Steed started running more fiercely.

[Ramson-nim is taking the field!]

He was a great warrior of the dwarf race. Ramson swung his large hammer.

Kwahhng!

The hammer collided with the warhead and completely absorbed the entire explosion.

Ramson possessed an innate skill called 'Shock Absorption.' The skill allowed him to absorb any physical impact. It didn't matter if it was an explosion or a magical attack. The hammer stored it all.

Moreover, the shock that was stored inside the hammer could be expelled, and the force was amplified by several magnitude.

Even as bullets were raining down on him, the Phantom Steed was getting closer to the wall being used as a barricade. Ramson swung his hammer.

Kwahhhng!

The wall exploded and the debris acted as a deadly weapon. It swept towards the insurgents. The Phantom Steeds breached the location where the wall had exploded.

"S... shoot them!"

Too-doo-dooo-doo-dooo-doo.

The machine guns fired towards the Death Knights. However, all of the bullets bounced off of them, even at such a close distance. Kiba's Phantom Steed reared back, crushing the vehicle with the machine gun.

Kwah-jee-jeek.

He looked at the gun men who died before they could let out a scream. Kiba let out a yell.

[Show them the Immortal's majesty!!]

The Skeleton Soldiers crossed the broken wall, after which they started slaughtering the insurgents. When they jumped into the fight, it took only a brief moment before the lives within the base were extinguished.

The hostages looked at Woojin with fear in their eyes. Woojin took out a short sword from his inventory and he severed the cable tie of the nearest hostage. Then, he gave the short sword to him.

“Release the rest of them.”

The man asked a question when English came out of Woojin's mouth.

“A... are you a US soldier? Did you come here to save us?”

“No.”

Woojin left the man and walked towards the base. The man prayed to his god as he looked at Woojin's back.

His god had listened to his prayers.

His god had taken pity on this man who had been shaking in fear. A savior was sent to him.

After the man cut all the cable ties on the hostages, they headed towards the base where Woojin had walked towards to. No one needed to speak.

No matter what anyone said, the safest place right now was next to Woojin.

“Where are the rest of the hostages?”

Woojin looked around at the corpses that were strewn about the devastated base. Then he revived all of them as Skeleton Soldiers.

Pah-paht!

In a flash, the spiritless Skeletons rose up and were automatically put under the command of the Death Knights. Once the Skeletons were put on the Death Knight's command, they would stand ready in the Summoning Room unless they were destroyed. They were summoned at the call of Death Knights.

“Where are the rest of the hostages?”

It happened before Woojin could go look for the captured hostages.

“Shit. Don't move!”

Maybe, they couldn't bring themselves to come out after hearing the commotion outside, but two sentries that had been guarding the hostages stepped forward. They dragged forward a hostage with a gun to his head. The man had lost the control of his bladder, so he walked forward awkwardly. It was none other than the weapons dealer, Roman.

“If you attack, I'll kill this hostage.”

Their eyes were filled with fear.

[Goo-roo-roo-roong.]

The Death Knight growled like a wild beast. When their eyes met the red glow, the Ogre's Fear swept over them and their bodies froze.

Woojin stretched out his hand and started using the Electric Shock.

Pah-jee-jee-jeek.

The Death Knight 'Rakto' walked towards the fallen two guards and stabbed his spear into their hearts.

“Huh-ooh-ook.”

After Roman was released from the Fear, he let out a cheer. Then he put out his hand after approaching Woojin.

“Hoo-ooh. Thank you for saving me. Are you a US soldier? If you tell me your name, I'll be sure to pay you back.”

“I don't need it.”

“Uh-huh. Is it because you are a soldier? I'll send it to you in secret. The amount won't disappoint you.”

Woojin summoned a Bone Spear and he aimed it at Roman's heart.

"Blah blah blah. Why don't you just shut up now?"

"....."

He knew those who worked in the battle field were rough, but how could he treat an US citizen like this? Roman frowned.

"I won't forget what happened here."

He didn't know if he should be repay him or hold a grudge, but Roman decided that this man who had rescued him was a Roused soldier.

Woojin smirked when he heard Roman's words.

He had 53 loyal Death Knights waiting for his command, and over 600 Skeleton Soldiers were under their command.

'Yes. A person of his disposition would deal in weapons... '

Woojin lowered the Bone Spear that had been pointed at his chest. Roman thought his words had gotten through to Woojin, so his face relaxed by a little bit. Unlike him, Woojin grin grew more wide.

"Hey. I'm so sorry about this. What should I do?"

"Haha. You don't have to apologize to me. As a US citizen....."

"Do I look like an American?"

Woojin spoke as if he was very proud of the fact that he wasn't an American, and Roman's words were cut short. No, that wasn't the only thing that was cut short.

Puh-uhk, too-doothk.

The Bone Spear was swung at an incredible speed, and it severed Roman's head from his body. No, it was more accurate to say his neck bones were broken and his head was ripped off.

“Does he think I'm some kind of babysitter?”

The Undead instinctively became excited, and the living people fell into a state of shock.

“Heeek!”

The other hostages, who were herded out with Roman, witnessed the brutal sight. They had assumed they had been saved from being shot, but now their faces were filled with fear. No one dared to open their mouth.

“Everyone gather here.”

At Woojin words, everyone gathered in one place. It didn't matter if they couldn't understand Woojin's words. They looked at their neighbors and followed their actions.

“Reporters step forward.”

“.....”

No one stepped forward at Woojin's words.

“If you don't step forward on the count of 5, I'll beat all of you. One, two...”

There was one finger left when three men stood up at the same time.

“All right. You guys follow me. The rest of you should send a request for help.”

No one complained when they heard Woojin's irresponsible words. They had seen Roman die in front of their eyes.

He told the hostages to use the communication equipment in the base to call for a rescue. Woojin waved the three reporters forward.

“Are you guys war correspondents?”

“Yes. I'm Tom, and this is Mark. We are Americans, and...”

“I'm Joni. I'm British.”

Woojin gave an order to the three of them.

"I want you guys to record everything I do as you follow me."

"...What are we going to film?"

Rescue unknown people from pain... Freeing and rescuing... These weren't actions befitting the Immortal. No, he wasn't confident he'll be able to pull it off.

Instead, he'll act as the god of Destruction's champion. As he embraced the pain, he'll bring destruction and an end to his enemies. He was confident he could do that.

"The killing and the destruction."

"....."

Did this person lose his mind?

He seemed to be a psychopath amongst psychopaths. He disguised himself as a hostage to be captured like some Egyptian Pharaoh in the myths. He used the Undead to kill all the insurgents, and he also killed a hostage he rescued to prove a point...

Now he wanted them to film him kill people?

He was a pervert. They were sure of it.

"I'm going to put an end to the terrorist groups."

".....!"

The context of the killing changed the opinions of others.

There was a fine line between being a murderer and a war hero.

They revised their opinions.

He wasn't a pervert. A messiah had appeared.



Bagram Air Force Base's Command Room.

"Look over here. Something is a bit off."

Rachel tilted her head in puzzlement when she saw the satellite photo sent from her homeland.

It was a picture of a large dust cloud. It was as if a large convoy of vehicles were moving.

"What is this? Did the insurgent have this much fleet of vehicles?"

"They are heading towards the stronghold of the rebels."

"Is there an internal conflict?"

"...I have no idea."

There were enough people moving for it to be visible on a satellite photo.....

David was tapping his forehead when his communications officer reported the missive he was waiting for.

"We received a message from the A team. They safely arrived at the destination. They have collected the 37 hostages. Unfortunately, Roman was found dead."

"Hmmm. How fortunate. The casualties for the A team?"

"They are all unharmed."

General David thought he had heard wrong, but his thoughts turned to praising the A team. They had taken no casualty, even though they had travelled deep within the territory of the rebels.

"They didn't have a single engagement."

"....."

At that moment, Rachel quickly put up the data she was receiving up on her tablet. She then showed it to the general.

"These are the photos and videos that is rapidly spreading across the internet."

"Mmmm."

David scrolled down the tablet to look at various pictures.

It was pictures of the bases of the insurgent being burned to ground. There were people being freed, and there were even some rebels surrendering... There was a single video mixed in with the photos, so he clicked on it.

[Kee-kee-keek.]

[Agrak to Mahsh.]

Undecipherable words spoken in the Alphen language was heard, and David saw a battle between the living and the dead. A blue ghastly Phantom Steed was breaking apart a tank too easily.

Apparitions wearing armors rode the Phantom Steeds, and several hundred Skeleton Soldiers were following them.

"Is this some kind of a movie trailer?"

"...Please look at the footage towards the end."

"Hmmmm."

When he skipped to the latter part of the footage, he saw Woojin being guarded by a variety of Death Knights. No, he wasn't being guarded. He was leading the horde from the front.

"Kahng-woojin?"

He wasn't shown in the camera, but David could hear the war correspondent talking busily.

[A messiah has appeared. The Korean Roused Kahng-woojin has declared war against

the terrorists, and his rage is sweeping across the desert. It seems his army won't stop until he eradicates this terrorist group.]

Behind the reporter's voice and face, one could see several thousand Skeleton Soldiers. The sight was enough to make one lose one's nerves.

"Should I really believe this is actually happening? Where did this footage originate from?"

"He is a war correspondent from the SNS named Tom. It is being uploaded on the youtube channel of a British war correspondent also from the SNS."

"Huh-uh."

The pieces fell into place.

The massive amount of people moving towards the stronghold of the insurgents were captured on the satellite photo.

The explosions and the massive amount of troops moving were causing dust clouds to form.

The rebels decided to gather their main force in one place. Moreover, Woojin was leading his Undead troops to the location.

These two large groups were on a collision course.

"It says he is a Necromancer. Is it possible for him to work on such a large scale?"

The Roused were supernatural beings, yet how was such a thing possible? A Necromancer that could control several thousand Undeads? Isn't this something only seen in legends?

"He has become famous in such a short amount of time, so not a lot is known about his Roused abilities."

"So, are you saying this is actually possible?"

How could he become so strong in such a short amount of time? It was as if he was a demigod that had dropped out of the sky.

It was pointless to argue about whether this was possible or not. It was already happening in front of their eyes.

"I've heard Holy Maiden Melody is well acquainted with Kahng-woojin."

"Mmm. Bring her here. No, I'll go see her. Where is she?"

"Normally, she stays in the infirmary."

David decided to go visit her himself.

An angry Roused disguised himself as a hostage to infiltrate the rebel stronghold, and he was creating an uproar.

He caused serious change in only one day, and the rebel forces were gathering for the final battle.

A mere private citizen was about to finish a job that the US government couldn't accomplish for the past couple years.

David found the Holy Maiden inside the empty infirmary.

Her abilities put the current medical knowledge on its head, and she was able to reduce the patients inside the Bagram Air Force base to 0. She was praying in front of a small statue of the goddess she had carved out of wood.

"Oh goddess. Please stop his wrath....."

He had to stop at an appropriate point. His overflowing rage will turn the world against him. It would lead both him and the world to their downfall.

Chapter 95

Wrath of the Desert (4)

On one hand, she felt resentment towards him.

“Why didn't you rage like this before?”

The Immortal she remembered was the monarch of Alandal.

He took the land abandoned by the dead and he had declared the region his. He declared it to be Alandal. He never coveted the other lands, and he never invaded other territories. However, if his territory was breached, he would use all the power under his disposal to fight against the invaders.

The only thing under his protection was Alandal.

When Kingdoms were being torn apart, they had made an alliance to barely preserve their lives, yet the Immortal only protected Alandal. If only the Immortal had tried to protect Alphen instead of Alandal... If that had happened...

Would Alphen be safe now?

“Oh goddess. Please block his anger...”

Azell couldn't become enemies with his fellow people of earth. If he became disillusioned, he might seclude himself once again to become a spectator. In a flash, Earth would be put in the same spot as Alphen.

The people of Earth was busy trying to save their own planet, so would they even think about saving Alphen?

“Please let his anger lead to the downfall of Trahnet...”

She understood everything now.

Woojin wasn't a savior. No, he couldn't become one.

He was the god of Destruction Thrash's Champion.

It was better to ally with the detestable Imp race rather than ask help from the Immortal.

She just have to hope his anger would be turned toward Trahnet.

She wanted him to kill and destroy their enemies. She wanted him to become the supreme being.

"Please let there be order after the destruction....."

Praise and yearning wasn't the only way to worship one's god. One could also fear god.

"May the Immortal be reborn as the true god of destruction..."

Melody wished with a sincere heart.

She didn't know if her earnest request was being heard. She couldn't tell if her goddess' statue was smiling or crying.



The command room of the rebels.

"Shit!"

The rebel's leader Karim grinded his teeth.

"What the hell are those crazy Skeletons!"

All their main rebel bases had fallen. The troops occupying the city was also gone. It was a place where civilians were mixed in with the rebels, so it was impossible for the US army to bombard the city.

Even the US infantry wouldn't dare to come in so deep into the city. The civilians were basically the Insurgent's main shield.

However, a crazy Skeleton Army had suddenly shown up out of nowhere, and they had swept across the city.

Guns were useless against them. The ugly Skeletons looked as if they had just popped out of the Dungeons. Moreover, they showed the ability to be able to only pick out the insurgents.

Still, it wasn't as if the Skeletons left all of the civilians alone.

It didn't matter if one was a civilian or a soldier. The Skeletons killed anyone who resisted.

What was more infuriating, however, was the crazy horde that was heading towards him.

When he felt threatened, he always moved to a different hiding spot. However, these bastards always corrected their course to head towards his location.

'My location is being leaked.'

He had no idea what method they were using, but those bastards kept heading towards him.

Some crazy war correspondent was following the Skeleton Army, so he was sure of this fact. Their target was himself.

If he couldn't run away, then he had no choice but to fight.

It would be better to fight them as early as possible.

He had to gather all his forces before they were defeated one by one.

Moreover, those bastards used the dead corpses to revive the Skeletons. The number of Skeletons didn't decrease with time. Instead, they were growing more numerous.

"We've finished assembling here."

"Let's head out."

He had always given order from the darkness, but now he would come face to face with his rebel army. He had no idea how they were tracking his location, but he would eventually die if he did nothing. He couldn't just stay within his hidden bunker.

It wasn't as if their secret stash of weapons were small.

He'll show them.

Agent of god Karim stepped out of the bunker and his shadow smiled without him noticing.



The reporters took their place on top of a distant mountain.

In the beginning, it was only Tom and the other three war correspondents. Now there were 30 total reporters following Woojin. Their equipments were quickly sent here, and it was even possible to do a live broadcast over the internet.

There were a total of 5 vehicles here to broadcast this event.

They were quite far away, since they might be swept up by the enemy's assault weapons. However, the view was unobstructed here so they could capture everything on the battlefield using the high-performance cameras.

[The final battle is ahead of us.]

The war correspondent Tom was broadcasting to a record-breaking number of viewers. In only a day, his voice resonated across the people of the world.

[This is a severe warning to the terrorists. That is his only purpose.]

The telescopic lense of the camera caught the sight of a bold Woojin leading an Undead army. He was on a Phantom Steed, and he was surrounded by Death Knights. He rode his horse slowly. He looked like a general looking ahead to the battle. He looked like a knight, who was about to take the field.

[Necromancer Kahng-woojin. This is the message he is sending to the world.]

The camera turned towards where the rebels were gathered. There were tanks lined up, and there were even vehicles renovated to carry missiles. One could see some magic being used, so it seemed that there were Roused were mixed in with the Rebels. They weren't wearing matching uniforms, and they didn't possess any shiny equipments. Still, there were over ten thousand insurgents, and their firepower was

nothing to scoff at.

[He raised an army to end the terrorists.]

The camera reflected Tom's face.

[The US and the UN security council are discussing sending troops and aid to the region, but nothing concrete has been decided. However, at this time, Kahng-woojin is getting ready for the final battle.]

After speaking those words of deep import, Tom's face became serious.

[I'm sure there are those who will be wary and guard against a Necromancer who controls this incredible army.]

Tom's face was beyond serious. He had on a resolutely determined expression.

[I've been a war correspondent for the past 15 years. This is the first time I've seen hope in midst of all the despair here.]

The camera panned towards the Undead Army.

There were already over 10 thousand Skeleton Soldiers in the surrounding. There were even several hundred Skeleton Magician in black robes present.

The camera took a close-up shot, and it took in the sight of Kahng-woojin.

[I truly wish he would transcend from being the king of the dead to a deity.]

Both sides were getting busy, and it seemed the battle was about to start.

[If he is able to win this war, I'm going make him a deity.]

After letting out his fiery words, Tom let his tears flow.



Woojin was atop Shing Shing and he let the horse run on a leisurely pace. Death Knights were surrounding him. Kiba's ride was about half a size larger than the other Phantom Steeds. It wasn't a horse, but a wolf.

[I never thought I would be able to ride with the King once again!]

Even amongst the war-like orcs, Kiba was a great warrior, who had stepped onto numerous battlefields. He was very excited for the battle that was forthcoming. They would stand in the front-line with the Immortal.

“Ah. You can look forward to it.”

Woojin let out a small smile.

After obtaining the Warrior Class, Woojin no longer had to support his summoned beings from the back. His main power would still be made out of the Undead Army, but Kahng-woojin wasn't weak at all now.

[Wah-ha-ha. Our monarch has become a true king.]

Ramson welcomed Wooin's Dual Class the most, and the other Death Knights were also very excited.

They had been sweeping across the rebel's bases, so their average levels were around 20.

Each of the Death Knights could command about 200 Skeleton Soldiers. He had assigned close to 10,000 Skeleton Soldiers to them.

Woojin only needed 1 Control for each Death Knights, so he needed only that 1 Control to maintain the summons assigned under the Death Knights.

Woojin used some of his Control on Ggaebi, Dolsae, Shing Shing, and Bibi. The rest were used to maintain summons over the Skeleton Magicians.

There were a total of 1200 of them.

If he had his Thrash's Set Items, then he would have been able to summon several times more Skeleton Magicians. Still, his fighting power wasn't too bad right now.

“It's too bad Jaenis isn't here.”

If Lich Jaenis was here, it would have been much easier to fight a large scale battle. It left much to be desired, but he wasn't impatient. If he returned to Korea, he could

quickly become level 80, while rolling with Sunggoo and Haesol.

“I guess they are coming out now.”

Woojin felt Ggaebi's energy becoming thicker, so he knew the rebel leader had come out of the underground bunker.

“Let's start heading towards them.”

Woojin took out his Warrior's Weapon and changed it into the shape of a hammer.

Shing Shing started blowing from the mouth as he ran forward. His underlings, the Skeleton Soldiers, slowly gained ground.

[I can't contain my excitement since I'm riding next to the King!]

[It's a Festival! It's a Festival of Blood!]

Woojin grinned at the Death Knights. They were getting pumped up as they talked amongst themselves. Over 10 thousand underlings made up his Undead Army. It almost made him think he was back on Alphen.

His familiars had missed the man from earth, and at the same time, they couldn't forget about the Alphen's Immortal. There weren't any indecisiveness, only ambivalence in their hearts.

To Woojin this was like his distant memories, and it was karma. He had lived a hellish life, and it wasn't something he could rewind. The hell hadn't ended yet.

Moreover, he was going to open the road to hell with his own hands, and he didn't know where the road will end.

“Sweep them all away!”

Shing Shing ran at a full gallop.

[Follow the King!]

Kiba's Phantom Wolf followed behind Woojin. Rakto and Ramson also followed behind them. The Death Knights increased their speed as they jockeyed for position to be in

the front.

Too-too-too-too-too-too-too.

The useless barrage of bullets rained down on them, and the slightly more dangerous missiles were also pouring down on them.

Kwah-kwah-kwahng!

Each of the Death Knights possessed useful innate Skills, so they wouldn't die just from a small missile. However, each explosion managed to kill several Skeleton Knights.

Ggi-ri-ri-reek.

The tanks that was lined up in front of them adjusted their cannons to slightly alter their aim. Soon after, their cannons started to fire.

Kwah-kwah-kwahng!

The Phantom Steeds moved in a mysterious and marvelous way, and their movements defied the laws of physics. They started dodging the bombardment. Once they got close to the tanks, the tanks wouldn't be much of a problem.

The 5 helicopters in the air was more of a worry.

Too-too-too-too-too. Pew. Pshhhhhh.

The helicopters that were equipped with a lot of missiles fired at the rear of the charging Skeleton Soldiers. Woojin, who was on Shing Shing, activated Soul Gallop.

Doo-doo-doo-doo.

Ghosts started to form in the air, and Shing Shing stepped on them to rise into the air. When they almost got close to a helicopter, Woojin summoned his Bone Spear and threw it.

Kwah-jeek.

The front mirror broke, and the Bone Spear pierced the pilot's heart. When the helicopter lost control of itself, it started to spin in place. Woojin summoned Dolsae,

who headed towards the helicopter to absorb it.

Ggoo-ggoo-goong.

The steel was crumpled by a strong pressure, and the people inside were expelled as if a bloody pus was being squeezed empty. The propeller was still spinning fiercely, tilting towards another helicopter.

Kwahhng!

It collided with the other helicopter, and the body of the helicopter crumpled in the same fashion. Then, it was absorbed by Dolsae, who started to form his body.

[Goo-ohhhhhhhh!]

Dolsae let out a roar, causing magical energy to drain out of Woojin's body at once. An attractive force was centered around Dolsae, pulling in the rest of the helicopters to make them part of the golem.

[Koo-ohhhhhhhh.]

Steel golem Dolsae was equipped with the propellers of the helicopters. He looked like a swordsman with several dozen swords equipped on his body.

Koo-oohng.

After landing on ground, Dolsae started crazily running forward. The missiles hanging around his waist were all fired towards the enemies...

Kwah-kwah-kwahng.

The unexpected heavy weapons attack drove the enemy line into confusion.

It was folly to think of the Phantom Steeds as mere cavalry mounts, because they resembled a horse. They ran faster than a sports car, and they could trample a tank.

While the troops clashed violently in the front, the Skeleton Magicians got closer and started pouring out their magic.

Hwah-roo-rook.

Several hundred Fireball attacks made the rebel's assembly place into a sea of flame. The Death Knights swept through the chaotic battlefield, creating hell on earth.



The rebel who had been shooting his rifle started to shake.

“T... this must be a nightmare.”

“How can there be such a cute nightmare like me-ahong?”

“Heeek.”

The rebel became frightened when the cat suddenly started talking. When he met eyes with the cat, he fainted.

“Have a cute nightmare-ahong.”

The fear he felt right now would repeat inside his dream.

Would it take about 100 years? The moment he realizes what had happened, he would be dead...

“Nyahng.”

Bibi moved to find her next food.



“This makes no sense.”

The head of the rebel, Karim, felt his body stop shaking. The reality was too wretched for him to feel fear from what was happening in front of his eyes.

They had destroyed around 2000 Skeletons.

However, they hadn't been able to destroy any of the bastards riding the horses. The same number of Skeletons destroyed were born once again from the corpses of his allies.

There was no point in killing the Skeletons. Even the mere act of rebels dying caused damage.

The battlefield was steadily becoming organized.

There was only faint sounds of guns firing, and the scream of the people were gruesome. Accompanying the bizarre Undead's laughter, the Skeletons made sure everyone was dead.

Kahng-woojin slowly approached Karim.

'It's that man.'

He was the owner of the Undead army. He was the unprecedented and powerful Necromancer.

He had ran away numerous times to hide himself, but this man kept tracking him down.

"God will be furious!"

Karim's shout was close to desperate shout.

"Why would god get mad when I'm sweeping away the trash?"

"...God will punish you all..."

Kwah-jeek!

The hammer in Woojin's hand crushed Karim's head.

The rebel leader wasn't worth capturing as hostage. This man changed his belief to fit his taste. Woojin didn't feel the need to have a long conversation with him.

He killed bastards who deserved death. It was as simple as that.

The blood on the hammer dripped to the floor.

"Come out."

Soo-roo-rook.

Ggaebi came out of the dead Karim's shadow and was reabsorbed into Woojin. He listened to Ggaebi's report. Then, the experience Ggaebi gathered as he followed Karim was absorbed into Woojin.

There were terrorists in other places other than Afghanistan.

"The world has a lot of trash."

The world was like a garbage dump.

Woojin let out a bitter laugh, and he tidied up the battlefield.

Chapter 96

Dismay (1)

Too-too-too-too-oo.

Above the burning battlefield, two US army helicopters were in the air.

The government made a big deal about deciding whether to attack the rebel's stronghold or not, but the US had been carrying out a small scale guerrilla attack on the insurgents for a while now. Moreover, the A team had rescued countless hostages and destroyed numerous key infrastructures. They had completed numerous missions.

The men wore sunglasses and all of them had an inner-ear mic. The noisy rotor of the helicopter didn't interfere with their conversation.

"Wow. What the hell are we seeing right now?"

"It's surprising."

"Leader. I guess we have nothing to do?"

A Team leader Bron surveyed the battlefield where the winner had already been decided. He shook his head from side to side.

The infrastructure was destroyed: there were fallen buildings and craters had formed on the road from the bombardments. It was proof of how fierce the battle had been.

The creepy part was that there wasn't a single corpse of the enemy or allies on the field.

All of the enemy's corpses were used as medium to summon the Skeleton Soldiers. Moreover, Kahng-woojin was very careful about who he considered to be an ally, so he had been alone.

"To think it's possible for a single person to settle all of this by force. It's surprising."

"Doesn't it kind of make you depressed thinking about how long we had trained? I should have just raised my Roused Rank."

This US Special Forces unit was composed of Rank D and above Roused.

Their battle capability, as well as their ability to carry out a mission, was on par with a Rank A Roused. However, when he saw with his own eyes the unbelievable result accomplished by the Rank AA Kahng-woojin, his own efforts seemed very trivial in comparison.

"Isn't he really a one man army?"

"Korea could give their entire defense budget to Kahng-woojin for his pay."

"Hahaha. They could seriously do that."

"It kind of makes me feel the futility of it all. What the hell were we doing in the battlefield up until now?"

"It isn't as if we suck. That guy is just extraordinary."

"It's hard to even call him a person now."

One after another, Kahng-woojin sent the Death Knights along with the Skeleton Soldiers under their command into the Summoning Room.

"Well, since the long battle is over, let's go in to close this."

"Let's head down."

At the leader's word, the helicopters started to slowly descend.

When the helicopters landed, Woojin sent back in all the Skeleton Soldiers under his command. Unfortunately, he had to cancel his summoning on the Skeleton Magicians.

If no one controlled the Skeletons, they would revert back into being monsters.

Everyone witnessed the grand sight of over 1000 Skeleton Magicians falling to the ground.

“You guys did well.”

“I've recovered a lot of my power-ahong. In a little while, I'll be able to be summoned with my real body-ahong.”

“That's great. You suffered a lot.”

While she was maintaining her cat form, she was capable of using her Nightmare and Hallucination without any problem. However, there was a gap in power.

If Bibi was summoned in her real form, her power was quite fierce. She would be able to use Mass Hallucination.

Bibi had leveled up, and she had slowly built up her power until she was close to being able to materialize her true form. However, it also helped that the ambient Mana level of earth had increased.

“Ooh-ha-ahm. Then I'll see you at the next battlefield-ahong.”

Bibi let out a yawn. She turned into black smoke which scattered into the air. Woojin turned to look at Dolsae.

“You should also go in.”

[Goo-goo-goo-gook.]

With the sound of steel snapping, Dolsae's shook his messed up body. The steel armors surrounding him started to fall off one by one. Soon a scrap heap was formed. Dolsae's heart popped out of the pile and disappeared.

The helicopters had landed earlier, but the media vehicles were the first to approach. When they were by Woojin's side, the A team was also on their way towards him.

“May we interview you?”

Reporter Tom's voice was cautious, and it was shaking from nervousness.

“No.”

“Yes. All right.”

Tom didn't ask any further. He turned the live broadcasting camera over to the battlefield. He announced the birth of a messiah and the end of the terrorists. He babbled on about the birth of a guardian of world peace.

After ending the live broadcast, he quickly came over to Woojin and lowered his head.

"Where are you going to go now?"

"I'm going back to Korea, so you don't have to follow me any more."

"Ah....!"

Tom let out a sigh. He had thought Woojin would continue his fight to completely eradicate the terrorists, but it seemed he planned to go back to his home country. However, Tom couldn't carelessly block Woojin from doing so.

"Thank you. The people of the world and the people here will never forget about Kahng-woojin-nim."

"You guys did well. I'll see you next time."

"....."

Woojin waved his hand towards the reporters, then he walked towards the A Team who was walking towards him. Tom felt his heart tremble as he watched Woojin's back get farther away.

He thought that he would never feel such a sense of anticipation even if he was lying down on the same bed as the most beautiful woman in the world.

"Next time..."

Woojin's last word gave him a weird sense of anticipation. Moreover, it felt as if Tom had been given recognition by Woojin, so he didn't move from the spot for awhile.

Woojin left the reporters, then headed towards the A team.

It was a very strange battlefield where only the sole victor was alive. A Team's leader Bron respectfully requested a handshake.

Woojin was acquainted with the A Team. The A Team had helped him come up with the plan of getting captured by the insurgents.

"I must congratulate you for this unbelievable result."

"Well, why are you guys here?"

A human killed other humans, so why would he need praise?

Death was merely a curse. Only the living could be blessed by victory. As a Necromancer, nothing made him more uncomfortable when someone praising a murderer.

Woojin immediately changed the subject as he asked his own question.

"We've come to get you."

"I never called for you."

"What?"

Bron was taken aback, but he eventually caught on that Woojin was making a joke.

"The government has yet to approve a direct conflict, so only the A Team was sent in as support."

"So you just watched me from afar."

"....."

Bron couldn't dispute Woojin's blunt statement. Truthfully, the A team's orders from Rogers was to, 'save Kahng-woojin if the battle was progressing unfavorably'.

The US government never thought a single person could end a war that they didn't even dare to start.

"Let's leave it at that. Let's go."

"Yes. Let's return."

At the leader Bron's order, the A Team surrounded Woojin as if they were an escort. Then they ran towards the helicopters. The reporters wanted to capture this image, so they were busy pressing down on the shutters.

“Do you think he'll be ok?”

“What are you talking about?”

The British reporter Jonie asked Tom a question.

“Over 20 thousand people have lost their lives.”

“Mmm.”

“Kahng-woojin killed so many people by himself.”

“What are you trying to say?”

Tom replied with an uncomfortable expression on his face. Was Jonie trying to imply Kahng-woojin was a mass murderer? Tom worked himself up as if his idol had been insulted. Jonie took a step backwards and waved his hands.

“This was a war. I'm just worried about Mr. Kahng-woojin.”

“What about him?”

“Look at the soldiers who returned from war. They suffer from PTSD.”

At Jonie's words, Tom immediately put on a worried expression. He summoned Skeleton Soldiers from the corpses to fight, but in the end, Woojin was mainly responsible for their actions.

He had killed countless number of people by himself. Wouldn't his heart be wounded?

The act of killing not only harmed the victim, it also made the perpetrator sick.

Woojin was putting the burden of killing tens of thousands of lives on himself. He couldn't help but worry about Woojin's mental state. He was sure Woojin had received some trauma to the mind.

He had been fooled by the tough exterior shown by Woojin.

Woojin was a savior sent by the heaven to end the war on terror.

However, in the end, he was human. He was the same as them.

“My god.”

Tom's face turned serious.

Woojin's stress level must have reached an extreme level. What would happen if he heard negative comments in his current state?

Wouldn't it be like a person saving someone and the rescuer being hit with an assault charge?

“We've got some work to do.”

They had to stop any negative public opinions from forming. This man was not a murderer. He was a war hero. Each of them had varying career length as war correspondents, but all 30 reporters had resolutely determined expressions.

They had to help him.

From now on they had to fight for the man who had save them. It was for Kahng-woojin, who would be having a hard time.



Too-too-too-too.

The rotor sound rang in Woojin's ear. He had folded his arms and his eyes were tightly shut.

As soon as he got on the helicopter, Woojin didn't move from that posture. No one from the A team dared to converse with him.

Woojin mediated with his eyes closed, and he relaxed his tightly wound heart. He let go of his nervousness, and his consciousness became fuzzy as if he had given himself into the care of the world.

He was in a dreamlike state. When his self-control became weaker, the evil spirits inevitably started to crawl around him.

The evil spirits clung to Woojin's body.

They stuck to Woojin's body as if they were poltergeists, who couldn't leave because of deep resentments.

'I'm sorry.'

Woojin looked at the soul which was a lighter shade of black. He sent his intent towards the evil spirit of the nameless girl. The evil spirit trembled, then it started circling around Woojin in harmony with the other evil spirits.

He had apologized.

That was the end. Now he didn't care if she had decided to haunt him...

'It's been awhile since I run amok.'

Woojin's thoughts deepened as he looked at the evil spirits.

If he wanted to save someone, then he had to kill someone.

He wasn't a god, so how could he decide who lived and who died?

When souls became evil spirits, they swore, cursed, and resented him. Ironically, it allowed Woojin to hold on to his sanity.

It was an appropriate punishment for his actions, and it lowered his sense of guilt.

'It feels dirty.'

Woojin frowned with his eyes still closed.

His past had been too brutal for him to be afraid of killing people.

'My adolescence has already passed.'

He had lived a really rough and brutal life. He would become lost in such thoughts. The

soft high schooler had become the Immortal, and he was still alive.

He just killed those who had to be killed.

His mind was unaffected, but he couldn't help but feel dirty.

Woojin opened his eyes at Bron's call.

"We've arrived."

"...yes."

Woojin focused on his consciousness and reordered his mind. After a brief amount of time, the evil spirits in front of his eyes disappeared. Then the sight of the Bagram Air Force Base came into view.

"Are you doing some kind of sports meet? Why are all these people gathered outside?"

"...Hoot."

Bron couldn't help, but laugh at Woojin's words.

He was a hero yet how could he lack so much self-awareness on what he had accomplished?

Too-too-too-too.

The helicopters landed on the landing pad. The soldiers were on parade with the landing pad at center.

Every soldier in the air base had shown up here. It didn't matter if one was on duty or on a patrol. Everyone stopped what they were doing, and they had come out here.

They came to greet the hero who had ended the war.

Too-too-too-too.

When the helicopter landed, Woojin got off.

General David stood foremost in front of the soldiers on parade. He was standing being

buffeted by the wind made by the helicopter. The staff, the Special Roused Division's Rogers, and the other officers stood a step behind him.

“What?”

Woojin approached general David with a playful smile on his face. Soon, the helicopters powered down and the A team followed behind Woojin.

[Attention!]

Chwa-chahk!

At Roger's voice, all the soldiers came to parade rest. Woojin's eyebrow rose at the energy of their synchronized movement. Then, he put on a playful expression.

[Put your respect into your salutes!]

“Sir!”

Their hands rose at the same time.

Their shouts filled the runway.

Woojin smirked as he looked around his surrounding. Everyone gathered there was raising their hand in salute. The members of the A Team, the intelligence officer Rachel, the pilots of the helicopter, the non-combatant military personnel and even the military engineers...

General David, who had lived for the past 30 years going from one battle to another, was also saluting towards him.

It was filled with respect and thanks...

“This...”

Woojin awkwardly raised his hand and he placed it next to his right eyebrow.

“Am I doing this right?”

The members of the A Team smiled. General David, who was facing them, laughed.

He thanked the hero who had ended this damnable war.

"They are welcoming you back with a hero's welcome."

David spoke, giving a slight gesture with his hand as if he was guiding Woojin. Then he turned around. With them at the center, the soldiers in parade rest parted to make way for them.

"Well, this is a bit embarrassing."

Well, this wasn't too bad.

When Woojin started to walk, the US soldiers all clapped and cheered to greet the hero.

"Thanks to you I'll be able to go back to my family now."

"I've lost 5 of my mates to those bastards. Thank you."

"Thank you..."

"I will be able to go back home now."

Whenever Woojin took a step, he heard dozens of people talking to him. His ears were numb, but it wasn't a bad feeling.

The tail end of Woojin's lips lifted a little bit.

'Well, I guess this isn't too bad in its own way.'

This was the first time.

These people were welcoming him without fear and worship.

Woojin reached the end of the road opened by the soldiers. When Woojin stopped, the Holy Maiden was standing in front of him.

Chapter 97

Dismay (2)

The US government couldn't even announce the cessation of hostilities yet. The troops didn't even have to keep the public peace, since the insurgents had all disappeared from the territories that had been held by the rebels. However, the Afghan government, the US government, and the UN council had to hold talks about this unprecedented event. While they were having this discussion, several members of the UN dispatched their troops as peacekeepers.

Already, half of the American forces that had been stationed in Afghanistan had moved out. They expected small acts of terror from the last remnants of the rebels, but the US soldiers knew their days were numbered. This was why the troops redoubled their efforts.

The remaining soldiers put on a small party to welcome the hero.

Food was plentiful, and alcohol was being served. The soldiers danced and laughed as they talked.

Woojin sat in the corner of the bar. He was drinking a cocktail mixed by a black man behind the bar. He didn't want to hear about exaggerated accounts of his heroism, and he wasn't interested in talking under the influence of liquor.

Everyone was feeling happy about the conclusion of the war. They were excited at the fact they'll be able to reunite with their families after returning to their home country. While he was quietly drinking his alcohol, the words spoken by the Holy Maiden kept circling around his mind.

'I'm sorry. As the representative of Planet Alphen, I want to apologize to you.'

The Holy Maiden gave a heartfelt apology. She hadn't thought of him as a human. She only thought of him as the Necromancer who butchered... This was why she had been afraid of him. She had stayed away from him, ostracizing him.

His personal power was so great that she hadn't been able to see Woojin as a human.

She had seen him as a demi-god. He really did meet face to face with gods, so it was too difficult to see Woojin as a human.

It might be because Melody was from Alphen. This was like trying to break an absolute law of the world. It was very difficult to change her assessment of him.

'You are also human... I didn't understand. I really didn't understand.'

Melody cried. She truly felt sad, and she truly felt wistful.

What would have happened if they had seen him as Kahng-woojin instead of the Immortal? What if he hadn't been treated as the king of the damned or as the monarch of Alandal? What would have happened if the human Kahng-woojin lived alongside other humans?

She shouldn't have viewed him as the demi-god Immortal. She should have seen him as the human Kahng-woojin.

If Melody hadn't come to Earth, she wouldn't have known this for the rest of her life.

She would have never found out what kind of person the Immortal, also known as the king of the damned, was like. She wouldn't have been able to see what his homeland was like.

She was able to see Kahng-woojin as a human after she arrived on earth.

'Please help us. We are suffering. Please save Alphen.'

He thought about the words spoken by the kneeling Holy Maiden in the past.

He had only faced the Holy Maiden on the battlefields. The Holy Maiden, who always looked at him with fear in her eyes, was asking in an earnest manner.

Woojin drank the rest of the alcohol.

"Rogers."

"Please speak."

Colonel Rogers sat next to Woojin, his eyes were filled with a favorable light. He would

have never guessed Woojin was such an amazing person. Moreover, the thing that surprised Rogers the most was Woojin's strong mental makeup.

"Currently, I have a tail on Nasser Saatchi so I'm going to collect collect the info."

Enough time had passed. The bastard was the middle man, so he would have had plenty of time to have come in contact with his accounting ledger.

"If I tell you his whereabouts, I would like the A team to recover him."

"Hmmm. You don't want to do it yourself?"

Woojin shook his head. He had other things to do.

"I'll be putting a tail on the leaders of all the other main terrorist groups."

"Oh-ho."

Woojin's ability was incredible for doing surveillance.

This time around he had been able to track down the rebel leader Karim like some ghost, and Woojin had been able to have a final showdown with him. If the bastard hadn't been worried about his location being blown, the final battle would have never happened.

He would have hidden himself deeper into the darkness, and his terrorist activities would have become much more secretive.

"They probably saw what happened in Afghanistan, so they probably went into hiding. They'll probably reduce the size of their operation if they plan on hiding. Let's just sweep away the heads of these organization."

If the command group disappeared above the organization's small-frys, the rest of the members were just kids taken in by a violent religion. The best thing they could do was capture the core members.

"You want to drive them into a corner, then pick off the important figures?"

"Ah, yes. Killing everyone isn't an option if I want to pursue peace for mankind."

“.....”

Roger's heart became chilled at Woojin's word. Woojin really thought unconventionally. If he was instead a little bit off in the head, it would have been a huge calamity for the human race.

“I'll put tails on them, and you eliminate those bastards in order.”

“Hmmm. Why don't you do it yourself? Why give us this chance to take credit?”

Woojin smirked at Roger's words.

He didn't care about receiving credit or acclaim from the meritorious deed. He just wanted to set an example since they had messed with him. It had been a long time since such a thing like desire for fame had made him act. If he did this himself, it wouldn't be efficient.

Moreover, Woojin had other things to do.

“Then I'll be going, knowing you guys will take care of it.”

“I'll immediately assemble the A team.”

When Woojin stood up, Colonel Rogers stood up with him.

Woojin went to the room assigned to him. The Holy Maiden was waiting for him in front of the door. He let out a light sigh when he saw her.

“What are you doing here?”

“I want you to give me an answer.”

The Holy Maiden politely got on her knees then she bowed her head to the ground.

Woojin squatted down to get on the Holy Maiden's eye level.

“Hey.”

“Yes?”

"Didn't you say you'll try to see me as a fellow human?"

"....."

"So why do you always get on your knees and groan like a constipated dog whenever you see me?"

"....."

What should she do? Woojin was someone who had faced a god.

She was a human who worshipped the goddess Aria. From her perspective, Woojin was someone who demanded her respect. Nothing changed that fact.

"I'm trying harder to understand a little bit more of you, Kahng-woojin-nim."

She'll look at him as the human Kahng-woojin instead of the Immortal.

"Eh-whew. I was going to go to Alphen anyways."

"That means...!"

The Holy Maiden's eyes shook as it bobbed up and down. Woojin shrugged his shoulders.

Currently, only 6 star Dungeons were open on earth.

Dungeons existed as high as 9 star.

If the 9 star Dungeons opened, it would be evidence that the amount of mana on earth had reached a saturation point. At that point, there were ingredients he will be able to acquire.

Moreover, most of the ingredient were rare ingredients needed to make his equipments.

Unless he purchased it through the Point Store by saving up points, he would have to acquire the ingredients from the 9 star Dungeons. If that wasn't possible, he would have to go on an expedition to Alphen to hunt down the rare ingredients.

If he wanted to go up against Trahnet's commanders, he needed Thrash's Set Items.

"I'm going to attack Alphen. You are responsible for saving the people. I'll allow you to follow me."

"Thank you. Thank you."

The Holy Maiden repeatedly bowed her head to express her thanks. Her goddess had been right. The savior of Alphen, who is on earth, was none other than Kahng-woojin. There was a reason why her goddess had guided her here.

"Just be on the lookout. I won't be doing anything for the next couple days."

"Yes."

Woojin returned to his room, then he immediately called Ggaebi.

"Bring in your Shadow..."

[Koo-kook. I'm looking forward to see who the bastard is.]

Ggaebi called back the clone he planted on Nasser Saatchi. He felt something rush in as if it was being absorbed. He absorbed what Nasser Saatchi had seen, heard and experienced.

He developed a small headache when the several days worth of memories appeared at once inside his mind. Woojin frowned as he pressed his hand against his temple.

"I guess I don't even need to go catch him."

Nasser Saatchi had been flipping through his ledger, and Woojin saw an important name under the unresolved cases. There several dozen names listed there, but those names weren't important to Woojin.

[Commission from Hwarang Guild Master]

"That son of a bitch?"

Woojin frowned when he thought about Hwarang Guild master Lee-sahngho. He looked like a mouse yet he dared carry out such an act. When Woojin looked back at

it, he knew Lee-sahngho had plenty reasons to resent him.

"We'll see after I return."

Woojin took a memo notepad off the table. He wrote down the location of Nasser Saatchi's ledger. He wrote down all the information including his whereabouts, as well as a pattern of movement.

"Melody."

"Yes."

Melody opened the door to his room and entered. Woojin handed her a note.

"Give this to Colonel Rogers when he comes back. Moreover, don't let anyone in this room for the next 3 days."

"Yes."

When Melody left with the memo, Woojin called Ggaebi once again.

"Just stay in bed and do nothing. If you roam around, then I'll really beat you up."

[Koo-kook. You don't have to tell me.]

Ggaebi was the one familiar that worried him. Still, he had no choice but to use him. Woojin switched souls with Ggaebi, then stood up as a Shadow.

'Six shadows.'

He would be able to investigate the whereabouts of 6 people.

Woojin used the information he learned from Karim to choose the 6 people. They were the most radical and active leaders. He stepped out as a Shadow. He'll be able to stick his Shadows on them.

Woojin stepped out as a Shadow while Ggaebi, who was inside Woojin's body, stood up. He took out a beer from the fridge then he drank it.

"Koo-koo-koo."

It felt good to take over a corpse, but it gave him a much greater thrill to be able to possess his master's body. After he drank a bottle of beer, he paced around the bed. He glared at the door to the room.

The Holy Maiden was out there. A plaything.

"Koo-kook. I'll behave for now."

He wanted to play and cause accidents, but he decided to be patient. His master was still wasn't whole yet, and Ggaebi had to grow with him.

Ggaebi let out a shrewd laugh and he fell onto the bed.



Sahdahng Station. Alandal Guild's Office.

The core members gathered inside the conference room. They looked at each other without saying anything. Everyone had a serious expressions on their faces.

The first one to speak was vice president Jung-minchan. He broke the heavy silence.

"Did you know about what he could do, director Hong?"

"I knew he had those abilities, but I never would have guessed about its magnitude."

Hong-sunggoo let out a deep sigh.

He already knew Woojin used Skeleton Soldiers and Magicians. He also knew each of them was comparable to a Rank D. No, it seemed they were close to Rank C now.

Moreover, there were over 10 thousand Skeletons.

"Whew... A person like that is really our president."

"....."

They all had the same president, so they all had dark expressions.

Now they were used to the reporters in front of the office. They even felt something

was missing if they weren't there. However, a variety of weird civic groups started gathering in front of the Alandal's office.

Moreover, the police were brought in to block them, so the area around Sahdahng station was always crowded with people.

"Well, we can't do anything about what's been done. Let's talk about a countermeasure."

Once again Kahn-woojin had done something really big. He had slaughtered an entire rebel force in Afghanistan.

It should have been called a war, but some people were calling it a massacre. That topic was dangerous in itself.

People were worried about the power shown by a private citizen.

The fact that the underlings he controlled were Skeletons revived from human corpses worried people. It was creating extra fear and worry about him.

"Mmm. Let's run a simulation first. How will our president react when he comes face to face with the people protesting out there?"

At Minchan's words, Woo-soonghoon raised his hand straight up into the air.

"Please speak, director Woo."

Woo-soonghoon frowned, and he mimicked Woonji's expression.

"Who are these trash? Do they want a beating?"

"Pooh-hoot."

Sunggoo broke out in laughter. Soon, he put on a serious expression, then apologized.

"Ah, I'm sorry. Still, it'll cause a lot of trouble once hyung-nim returns. Hyung-nim's personality won't allow him to leave them alone."

Minchan's expression darkened.

"That is why we have to come up with a countermeasure."

Haemin spoke with a serious expression on his face. He had gained a lot of info about the members of congress from the reporters he had gotten close to.

"The congress isn't in a good mood. We've turned down their offer once, so they aren't looking at our entire guild in a favorable light. Moreover, they became wary once it had become known how much power is at our disposal."

"What? Do they think we will perform a coup d'etat?"

Woo-soonghoon became angry since this business involved him. However, these thoughts differed from the adults in congress. The people with power became wary when someone other than themselves obtained power.

It was either getting in the same boat with clasped hands or sinking the boat.....

Woojin had refused the hand they extended. However, Alandal's presence had become too large for them to sink Alandal.

"Several members of congress are talking about barring the president from setting foot on Korea."

Everyone frowned at Haemin's word.

Woojin wasn't causing any harm to Korea, so why were they making all this fuss.....

"Ughh. Let's come up with a countermeasure."

If Kahng-woojin returned to Korea as it is, there will be trouble.

The media of the world were all praising Kahng-woojin as a hero who had saved the world from terrorism. However, the Korean government was uneasy with Kahng-woojin, and all the religious groups were going nuts about him.

If Kahng-woojin returned as it is, it was obvious he would go off like a bomb.

The people were too ignorant about him.

Kahng-woojin's first rule was an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth.

Kahng-woojin kept that rule above any law. The people of the world were putting too much faith in their own laws.

They were basically dancing in front of a lion, while not knowing that the fence had fallen.

“Eh-whew.”

This won't be resolved by moving their office. They couldn't come up with an idea, so all they could do was sigh. Woo-soonghoon spoke as he kept glancing at his handphone.

“Uh? It says the Dungeon in Daegoo just had an outbreak.”

“Huh? I haven't received that info yet.”

Minchan was puzzled as he turned on the TV. Dungeon Break happened 30 days after the first Dungeon raid had failed. There was no way Minchan wouldn't know about such a Dungeon.

[I am in Daegoo. The Dungeon Break happened simultaneously. Currently, we aren't able to get close, and the military troops nearby are mobilizing. The government has immediately imposed martial law, and they are requesting cooperation from all the guilds.]

A helicopter from afar was filming the footage. The city was burning and the monsters were causing havoc between the collapsed buildings.....

The chaotic scene meant the people hadn't been prepared for the Dungeon Break. They were experiencing a calamity that would cause an incredible amount of damage. This reminded people of the very first Dungeon Shock.

‘President.’

As they watched the breaking news, everyone thought about a single figure.

Chapter 98

Hong-sunggoo's Rush (1)

[Currently, the Dungeon Break is suspected to have occurred at an already cleared Dungeon. This event is unprecedented, and this scene is a recreation of the Dungeon Shock...]

Everyone's insides became numb as they watched the news flash.

“What the hell is going on?”

How could a Dungeon suddenly break without the 30 day wait period?

When everyone had fallen into a state of panic, the door to the room opened.

“Vice president. We've received a request from the Ministry of National Defense. All Roused are ordered to stop clearing the Dungeons. They are ordered to be on standby.”

“Mmmm. All right.”

After the employee stopped speaking, Minchan's expression became serious.

This was an unusual Dungeon Break so it was the right move to put everyone on standby, except for those members who were currently in the Dungeon. Sunggoo was here and Haesol was nearby at the newly leased Monster Quarantine center.

“I have no idea what is going on.”

“Shouldn't we report it to our president first?”

“Mmm. I don't have any way to contact...”

Woojin didn't use social media, and he didn't even check his e-mails that often. The only way to contact him was through the messenger app, but it would be impossible if he didn't have internet connection.

"First, send him a message. Then try contacting him through the Titan Guild."

He was with the Holy Maiden. If they could contact her, then they could reach him through her. Of course, even if that didn't work out, this Dungeon Break would be reported by the world news, so he'll eventually receive the news.

"Hmmm. What the hell is going on again..."

Minchan's body shook when he thought about the Dungeon Shock that had happened 5 years ago. Countless people died that day and many cities had been destroyed. They were able to recover in such a short amount of time using the incredible amount of money made from the Bloodstones produced by the Dungeon. However, the population that had been killed off at that time hadn't recovered yet.

Everyone looked at the news with a serious expression.



The buildings in close proximity to Daegoo's Jookjun Station was razed to the ground.

"Koo-ohhhhhh!"

The Ice Trolls rampaged like mad men. The clubs they swung blew the vehicles away too easily, and the buildings crumbled when they tapped the clubs against them.

There were no warnings before the Dungeon Break happened, so this was a calamity for city dwellers nearby.

An Ice Troll was huffing and puffing as it wandered around the residential area.

"Koong koong."

It smelled the scent of humans.

Koohng. Koohng.

It wasn't as large as an ogre, but it was twice as large as a human. The Ice Troll was tall enough to be able to look through the second floor window of a house. The Troll with the disgusting eyelashes searched by looking through the windows.

“Kyahhhhk!”

A girl made eye contact with the Troll. She covered her head, and she let out a scream.

“Koo-roo-roo.”

The Ice Troll laughed as it stretched out its arm. Young humans were especially delicious.

“Kyahhhhk!”

The Ice Troll had abundant white fur on his body. It used its long arms to break the window, messing up the interior of the room as it tried to snatch the girl. The girl tried to back away, but the wall was at her back. She had nowhere to run.

The door was right next to her, but fear made her feet leaden. The thought of opening the door and running out hadn't even occurred to her.

“Koo-roo-rook.”

The Ice Troll was close to catching the girl, but she kept eluding the Ice Troll. It became angry and raised its club. It decided to destroy the house, then eat the young child.

At that moment, a muscular man fell from the sky.

“Hahhhhhhp!”

Kwahng.

A human's fist descended on top of the Ice Troll's head to strike it.

“Koo-roo-roo-roook!”

“Ah. It isn't dead.”

He had put all his weight behind the attack yet the Ice Troll hadn't died. The Troll had a well-deserved reputation. The shaped of the Troll's head was deformed, as if its skull had been crushed. However, it was twitching as it started to recover.

“If one blow doesn't work, then I'll give him a second one!”

The man's fist turned black.

Kwahhng!

It was as if his black fist had turned into stone. It cracked the Ice Troll's head, and brain matter spilled out. The Ice Troll was still twitching, but soon, even that came to an end.

"Hey, little kid. Come out."

Even at the man's words, the girl wouldn't move because she was too afraid. A group of people came chasing after the man.

"President!"

"Take care of everything here. There is a kid over there."

"Yes, sir."

KH Guild's president Baek-jongdo walked into the alleyway, frowning when he saw another Ice Troll coming towards him.

"The army isn't here yet?"

"They are trying to quell the monsters from the east. The civilians aren't evacuated yet, so you shouldn't expect any fire support."

This was a problem. If it was a scheduled Dungeon Break, it wouldn't have been a problem.

They would have evacuated the civilians, and the army would have concentrated their superior firepower to overwhelm and slaughter the monsters that popped out of the Dungeon.

However, this course of action wasn't possible since this was an unscheduled Dungeon Break.

Since the evacuation of civilians never happened, it was impossible to bombard the city. Moreover, armored vehicles were too slow to root out the monsters that were now hiding within the city. The Roused were best suited for tracking down and hunting the monsters unleashed within the city.

This was why all the Roused, who had come to raid the Daegoo Dungeons, were given mobilization orders.

KH guild's Baek-jongdo had an appointment to enter the Daegoo Station's 6 star Dungeon. However, when he heard about the Dungeon Break, he had come here.

The Roused occupied downtown as they hunted down the monsters.

"Chet. Fortunately, there weren't too many released."

A Rank B Roused was capable of facing off against an Ice Troll. If there was a really big one, it was possible to take the Troll down by teaming up with several Roused. This wasn't the Dungeon where there was a limit on how many people could enter. The Roused held the numerical advantage out here. It was quite fortunate that the big bodied Ice Trolls had come out, as they were quite easy to spot. It would have been difficult to make much progress if small monsters, who were adept at hiding, had come out.

The damage couldn't be helped, and it wasn't enough damage to call it a calamity. There had been only one Dungeon Break. The problem was whether this unannounced Dungeon Break was an outlier or the beginning of something new.

"I hope this is a one-off event."

If one wanted to say this event was a simple accident, they would have to find the reason why the Dungeon Break happened without any warning. However, they had to exterminate all the monsters unleashed here first.

Baek-jongdo looked at the Ice Troll stroll towards him and his fists were dyed black.



Shwahhhhh.

As the water fell from the showerhead, it felt as if the water was cooling his hot body and mind.

"Ha-ah."

Lee-sahngho let out a restless moan. He had gained something incredible.

“I can control it.”

The Roused could only come out after clearing the Dungeon. The Return Stone had to be used to bring down the barrier. It was the same for the monsters. After 30 days, the monsters used the Return Stone to come out of the Dungeon.

This was the Dungeon Break.

“Ha-ah. This power.....”

He had become Iello's vassal. Most of the monsters didn't even register his presence as he had headed towards the Return Stone. He took the Return Stone and brought down the barrier.

It was like any other Dungeon Break, but this time he had guided the monsters out this time. He had loosed them into the world.

It was without warning, and it was by his will.

“Koo-koo-kook.”

He knew how big of a damage a Dungeon Break would cause if the people wasn't prepared. He had already experienced it through the Dungeon Shock.

Most people had evacuated to a safe zone far away from the subway stations. However, there were still a lot of people around the Dungeons because of the Dungeon Businesses. Many people still lived near the Dungeons.

This situation was akin to a house of cards.

He just had to manipulate it a little bit, and it would all come falling down.

“Tremble from the fear.”

It was regrettable that he couldn't control the monsters. However, he'll be able to get the desired result just by being able to cause a Dungeon Break.

Of course, he had to prepare several things.

It didn't matter if he had come out immediately after the barrier went down or if he

had waited before doing so. People might discover him coming out of the Dungeon with the monsters.

He had to make preparations so he could cover up his activities.

He would begin after he finished setting several things up.

“Kahng-woojin. Wait for me.”

Kahng-woojin.

The bastard had to feel it.

The sadness felt from loss.

“What should I steal from his first?”

Lee-sahngho, who had gained power, laughed. He couldn't feel any more satisfied with the appearance reflected by his mirror. In recent days, had he ever been as happy as he was today? Endorphin surged just from thinking about how we would destroy that bastard.

It felt as if the stress that was suffocating him was blown away.

“Yes. First, his family...”

Next his friends, guild, underlings, reputation...

He would steal it all from Woojin.



There were 47 dead and 512 wounded. An estimate of 50 million dollars worth of damage was done.

The unannounced Dungeon Break held massive implications, and the damage it caused was enormous.

It hearkened the memories of the Dungeon Shock, along with the fear that was felt on that day.

Just this single Dungeon Break prompted an exodus of people out of cities possessing subway stations.

There were some who left, and there were some who stayed. However, the people who stayed were those who didn't have the means to move. The people with money quickly left to the safe zone, and the rest of the people slowly started getting ready to leave.

It had been only two days since Daegoo's Dungeon Break had ended.

In just two days, 10% of Seoul's population had migrated to Kahng-wondoh's safe zone.

“Hoo-ooh. I'm too restless to stay still.”

Sunggoo and Haesol had stayed idle during the two days, since they weren't allowed to clear Dungeons. They keenly felt the loss of opportunity. Danger had come calling, but they hadn't been ready. They felt a sense of powerlessness.

No, they had made preparations.

They temporarily moved all their families nearby Alandal's office so they could protect them just in case. The real estate prices in the safe zone skyrocketed, but the apartments near the stations were bottoming out.

From Sunggo's perspective, he felt better knowing his family was nearby.

“We can't still contact hyung-nim?”

“Mmmm. They said he is in the midst of an operation. He'll probably call us soon.”

Minchan was also frustrated. Korea was rocking yet the leader of Alandal, who had to be their anchor, was absent.

Sunggoo was frustrated. He wasn't training or hunting right now. An uneasy feeling grew inside him as if he had taken a step backwards.

“I can't stay like this. I'm going to go around the nearby low rank Dungeons.”

“Mmm. You do that. When you are done, let's contact each other immediately”

“Yes.”

“Go with team leader Woo. It would be best if we communicated through team leader Woo.”

“I'll do as you say.”

He was the chief of the president's secretary office, but Kahng-woojin was currently absent. This was why Woo-soonghoon joined Sunggoo to assist him. The clearing time of low rank Dungeons was short. Sunggoo thought it was more productive and better for his peace of mind if he cleared some Dungeons rather than doing nothing.

Maybe it was caused by the feeling of unrest, but the usually full Dungeon schedules had several empty spots. However, the lower rank Dungeons didn't operate on appointments. This was why the employees from the secretary office was sent to the close-by Dungeons to line up and were able to set up a schedule.

“Currently, it is possible to use Leesoo Station's 4th Exit.”

“Then let's head towards there.”

It was only one station away, so the location wouldn't cause any burden. Sunggoo and Haesol headed towards the Leesoo station. Jackson was inside a container truck. When they arrived at the Leesoo station, the saber-toothed tiger Jackson and the knife-beak crows got off.

“I'll be back within 3 hours.”

“Yes, sir. Please work hard, director.”

He couldn't clear the Dungeon at a crazy fast speed like Kahng-woojin, but he could solo clear a 3 star Dungeon within 3 hours. Moreover, Haesol was him, so the clear time would be much shorter.

Sunggoo and Haesol disappeared into the Dungeon. Woo-soonghoon started the now familiar waiting game.

“Hah. Should we go to a cafe?”

“Yes, chief.”

There were 20 employee under the secretary's office. Soonghoon left couple of them to guard the Dungeon Entrance, then headed towards a nearby cafe with the rest of the employees.

"Uh?"

Soonghoon was heading towards the cafe when he saw a man wearing a black robe and a matching black mask. Soonhoon unconsciously came to a stop and tilted his head in confusion.

'It looks like he is laughing at me.'

He quickly looked around, but this other person was already on his way.

'Did I see wrong?'

The shape and glint of his eyes made him feel that this person knew him. It felt as if the man was laughing at him. He was wearing a mask, so Soonghoon thought his eyes were playing tricks on him.

Woo-soonghoon headed towards a cafe and the masked man headed toward Leesoo station's 8th exit.

Chapter 99

Hong-sunggoo's Rush (2)

“Isn't that person a bit suspicious?”

The employee shrugged his shoulder at Woo-soonghoon's words.

“People like that are quite common. He's probably a Roused.”

“Is it?”

Artifacts came in a variety of forms.

People took out insurance on it, since the precious Artifacts might be stolen. Still, there were those who wore it out in the open occasionally.

Moreover, it wasn't rare to see people wearing swords and spears near the stations.

Ddi-ri-di-ri ding ding!

Soonghoon's handphone rang. When he took it out, he saw that it was Kim-haemin who had been promoted to the position of director.

“Uh? I wonder what's the occasion. Just buy me any juice.”

“Yes, chief.”

He sent the employee into the coffee shop ahead of him. Soonghoon sat on the chair out on the terrace and answered the phone.

“Yes, director.”

[Mr. Soonghoon. Did Mr. Sunggoo and Ms. Haesol go into the Dungeon right now?]

“Yes. They just went in right now.”

[Ha. This is bad. There was a Break at the Sadahng station. Don't come to the office. Please evacuate for now.]

“What?”

Woo-soonghoon was blinking his eyes when the noisy siren started to wail.

Ehhh-ehhhhh-ehhhhh-ehhhhng!

It was as if they were running a civil defense drill. However, the sound sent chills down Woo-soonghoon's spine. He thought about the Dungeon Break that happened at Daegoo not too long ago. Sadahng Station was merely one station away.

[This is an announcement. Currently, a Dungeon Break is occurring at the Sadahng station. Civilians should immediately evacuate. This is an announcement...]

After the announcement ended, people started to pour out from the buildings. This was also true for the employees of the secretary office.

“C... chief!”

“Hoo. Everyone follow me. Let's go.”

Wasn't there a saying that said an office makes the man? Woo-soonghoon led his panic-stricken employees. He told himself he had to keep a level head.

At Soong-hoon's word, the employee followed him to their cars, and they quickly got in.

“Everyone get in the vehicles, and for the time being, we are putting some distance to the Sah-dahng Station. Please hurry.”

“Yes, sir.”

The Dungeons were safe. The Dungeons wouldn't fall even under bombardment. Whatever inside the Dungeon posed more of a threat than an assault from the outside. Sunggoo and Haesol would be fine. They would exit after they finish clearing the Dungeon.

He thought it would be better for them if they took their time in clearing the Dungeon.

Then, they would be able to come out after the situation outside had settled.

Soonghoon quickly got into the passenger seat, then opened his handphone to check the news. As soon as he opened his internet browser, he tapped for the breaking news.

“Shit. It's a 6 star Dungeon!”

Of all the Dungeons to break, it had to be the 6 star Dungeon that was located at the 1st exit. He quickly opened the Dungeon Forum to gather information about that particular Dungeon. The main monsters were Gray Wolves.

They were as big as cows and possessed great mobility. They were adept at hunting, and their specialty was to attack the Roused in a pack.

“Shit!”

At the very least, several hundred of these bastards had been set loose in Seoul. They were smaller than the Ice Troll and much faster. It would probably take much them longer to eradicate these monsters. As time passed, the casualties would mount.

“Where are we going, chief?”

“Let's start moving for now. The nearest shelter.....”

Woo-soonghoon was checking the Dungeon Forum when he felt a weird sense of danger at the intersection. His eyes became fixed on a particular location.

Leesoo station's 8th Exit.

It was the Dungeon where the eccentric man wearing the black robe and mask had gone in. A large snake with its mouth open suddenly shot out from the entrance.

Woo-soonghoon's eyes became wide.

It was an incredibly large snake. Its head was as big as a person's body.

“Step on it!”

“...!”

At Woo-soonghoon's yell, the employee on the wheels pressed hard on the gas pedal.

Boo-ahhhhbng!

"Kyah-roooooo!"

It moved at a speed that wasn't comparable to a normal snake. After popping out from the Dungeon, it opened its jaws wide and slithered towards the intersection.

Kooohng!

The car following behind Soonghoon rammed into the head of the snake and flipped over. Poison fell from the snake's fang, falling onto the windshield of crashed car.

Poo-shi-shi-shi-shi.

The poison was so strong that it melted through the glass. The poison fell on the driver, after which the man yelled out in agony.

"Ggoo-ahhhk."

Shwee-shwee-shweek.

The snake's flicking tongue wound around the driver and the man was lifted straight into its mouth.

"Crazy!"

If Woo-soonghooon had been a little bit late, he might have been the human inside the snake's maw. The thought sent chills down his back. Accompanying the large snake, monsters that lived in jungles started to flood out from the Dungeon.

"Shit! Just step on it."

"Yes, sir."

The employee who was driving had working eyes, so he could see the monsters coming out from the side mirror. He kept pressing on the gas pedal like a madman. In a flash, the monsters ruthlessly slaughtered several dozen people.

“Shit. That's a 5 star monster.”

Woo-soonghoon spat out a curse when he searched for information on the Dungeon Forum. It was a situation where curse words came out automatically from his mouth.

It was another Dungeon Break without any warning.

Daegoo was merely the beginning.

Monsters were running amok near the Seoul's Dungeons.



“Ha啊. Ha啊.”

Haesol gathered her breath. Sunggoo smiled as he extended his hand towards Haesol.

“Heh heh. Well done.”

“Ha啊. You are incredible, director Hong. Your close combat ability is just as good or even better than a physical Roused.”

It was important for her to learn other form of combat techniques alongside developing her Monster Taming skill. The matches with Sunggoo proved to be very insightful for Haesol.

“Heh heh. I'm still a ways off. If I compare myself to hyungnim... No. I can't even reach the shoulders of his knights. Heh heh.”

Was he being serious?

It was a waste of time to say anything about Kahng-wojin. However, the Death Knights were the definition of monsters. Haesol and Sunggoo had sparred against them, and she had felt the true gap between her and the Death Knights.

These two men were gifted warriors.

If she wanted to become as strong as them, she would have to train more in the future.

“Let's head out.”

“All right.”

Sunggo and Haesol retrieved the Return Stone together. After that, they headed towards the barrier. When he brought up the Return Stone, the barrier dimmed as it disappeared. After ascending the stairway, the two were greeted by a street that was much changed.

“Uh?”

For a brief moment, they couldn't comprehend what was happening. There were craters here and there on the road, the vehicles were damaged, and windows of buildings were shattered. There were also some fire, accompanied black smoke rising into the air.

“Oooh-ahhhhhk!”

“Koo-rwahhhh.”

Screams and horrible shrieks.

Too-doo-doo-doo-doo!

Pah-jee-jee-jeek!

It was the sound of guns and Electric magic going off.

“Huh.”

Sunggo expelled a short breath from his mouth.

He wasn't a dummy. He soon realized what was happening.

Dungeon Break.

Sunggo's face became serious.

His heart was beating at an acceptable rate. His muscles were taut like a drawn bow and his senses became sharp.

“Ms Haesol. You take care of that bastard.”

“Yes. Let's go, Jackson!”

“Kwahng!”

As if Jackson was showing off his sharp canines, he roared as he jumped. The Roused and a large bear was in the midst of a battle when Jackson jumped in. Haesol sent a telepathic message to each Roused.

[Let's divide and conquer.]

Haesol quickly assessed the battlefield. She quickly formed teams to fight the monsters and helped those who were engaged in battle with the monsters. Most of them were Rank C and below Roused.

Only the sabre-toothed tiger Jack had Rank B fighting power.

When the Roused joined up with Haesol, they started hunting the monsters at a much faster rate.

Sunggoo's gaze was drawn to the Bloodstone Exchange store located near the Dungeon.

“Koo-roo-rook. Koo-roo-rook.”

A large snake was busily eating bloodstones after it had knocked over the building.

Every time it ate the bloodstones, it let out a soft light and its body was slowly getting bigger. If it wasn't busy eating the Bloodstones, it would have probably killed all the Roused in the vicinity.

Hwah-roo-rook.

Sunggoo immediately shot his Fireball towards the snake.

“Chweek.”

As if it felt the threat, the snake raised its head to evade the Fireball.

Kwahng!

The Fireball created by his ability didn't hit its target, but when the ball of flame hit the floor, it exploded.

"Chweek?"

The snake's tongue darted in and out as it slowly moved towards him. Its body was large enough to be compared to the monster serpent, leemoogi, from the legends. Moreover, its shiny skin was letting out a 5 colored light.

It was a Rainbow Cobra.

'I'm capable of facing it.'

Its scales had 5 shades of color. It meant it was a 5 star monster.

Sunggoo narrowed his eyes as he glared at the snake.

"Shwee shwee shweek."

It flicked its tongue as it headed towards Sunggoo, its scales turning cloudy.

"Uh?"

Unless it suddenly developed a skin disease, there was only reason why it was doing this.

"Shwee shweek."

The bastard started shedding its skin. The shining scales held 6 shades of color.

"Hah hah."

Sunggoo wiped the sweat coming down his forehead.

This was a 6 star Rainbow Cobra.

According to the published documents, this was the boss monster that had appeared on the very first clear. After the 6 star Dungeon was cleared, only the 5 colored Rainbow Cobra and the basic monsters had appeared...

'Will I be able to do it?'

He had successfully raided the already cleared 6 star Dungeons before, but he had never attempted a 6 star Dungeon that hadn't fallen yet. Sunggoo swallowed dryly. He thought about the words he heard when he first met Woojin.

'A man doesn't show he is afraid even when he is afraid.'

He could almost hear the sound of Woojin's voice in his head. Sunggoo followed his example and, with a smirk, activated the Iron Skin.

"Shwee-sweek."

He glared at the Rainbow Cobra which had developed 6 colors. Then he ignited the magic that was flowing over his strengthened skin.

Hwah-roo-rook.

Sunggoo's body started to burn. He literally became a smoldering human torch.

"Kyahhhk."

The Rainbow Cobra showed its imposing fangs and spit out its poison. However, it evaporated as it neared the fire. Sunggoo started throwing fire towards the Rainbow Cobra.

Kwahng, kwahng!

The bastard was so big that he didn't have to aim carefully to hit it. It didn't seem like it was taking much damage, since the scales were too thick. Still, it was enough to annoy the bastard.

"Kyahhhk!"

The bastard was pissed as it fiercely charged towards Sunggoo.

"Blaze"

Just as Sunggoo turned around to run away, a road of flame was formed in his wake. The skill only charred the scales, but it couldn't cause burns to the snake. However,

Sunggoo razed the floor as he kept dodging the snake.

Hwah-roo-rook.

The road was filled with fire. Sunggoo was running away, and the Rainbow Snake was chasing him.

After a long time, Sunggoo looked at the entirely red road filled with fire. It was hot enough to give stabbing pains to his heart. He smiled.

“Chweek.”

The pissed off Rainbow Cobra glared at Sunggoo and coiled its body. As it unfurled, the bastard sprung towards Sunggoo.

“Flame Absorption.”

Sunggoo spoke the incantation and the flame filling up the road was being sucked entirely into Sunggoo. The flames from vehicles in mid-explosion, the flames ignited from the gas main, and even the flames burning up the entire commercial buildings were all sucked towards Sunggoo.

The flame over his entire body that was being protected by the Iron Skin was also absorbed. It all coalesced on Sunggoo's right hand.

Amongst the Flame manuscripts acquired by Woojin, this magic produced the most powerful and destructive force. It was the Essence of Flame made by gathering all the flames in the surrounding.

“This will be a bit hot.”

“Kyahhhh.”

Sunggoo jumped while holding on to this ball of fire. The Rainbow Cobra was stretched to its full length in the air. It opened its mouth as if it planned on swallowing Sunggoo. Sunggoo grinned with the ball of flames in his right hand.

He threw the Hell Fire into the 6 colored Rainbow Cobra's mouth.

“I'll roast you!”

Kwahhhng!

The Fireball exploded inside its mouth and the Cobra's head exploded. Sunggoo was swept up in the aftermath of the explosion and was sent flying. He became embedded in a vehicle.

“Director Hong!”

The surprised Haesol ran towards him, but physical Roused weren't even capable of taking blows like him. Sunggoo stood up as he moved his arm around in a circle. He stretched his shoulder. As he was being thrown towards the car, he had tried to stop his momentum using his arm. As a result, it had almost fractured.

“Ooh ooh. My arm almost broke.”

“You are really incredible!”

“Heh heh. It's nothing.”

Haesol's eyes were filled with admiration as she looked at Sunggoo, who was letting out an honest laugh.

Chapter 100

Bullet Taxi

“Hooo. So what happened here?”

At Sunggoo's question, one of the Roused next to Haesol spoke.

“Ah-yoo. You don't know the half of it. It started at the Sadahng station, then the nearby Dungeons Broke in succession. Currently, the entire city of Seoul is in a state of emergency. I'm not sure which guild you are from.....”

At a glance, they could tell Sunggoo's combat ability was extraordinary. With this much skill, he should be a famous high rank Roused. However, his face was unfamiliar to them, so they carefully asked Sunggoo the question. At the man's words, Sunggoo acted like his usual self. He let out a laugh.

It seemed that more than one Dungeon had experienced a Break. Even now Sunggoo could hear sounds of explosions and guns. It tickled his ears.

Amongst the words spoken to him, there was a word that bothered him.

“The Sadahng Station Broke?”

“Yes. It was the first one to Break. Hammer guild was nearby, so it looked as if it would be resolved pretty quickly. However, after the Dungeon Break of the first 6 star Dungeon, a 5 star Dungeon and a 4 star Dungeon broke one after another. It seems they are still trying to settle the situation.”

There were numerous entrances to the subway stations, and there was an equal amount of Dungeons to the exits. Three consecutive Dungeons had Broken nearby, and it would take some time to clear the monsters.

Moreover, Sadahng station was the epicenter of the Breaks. The stations around the region Broke. No matter where one turned one ran into a monster.

His family was there...

“Ms. Haesol. I'll have to go to Sahdahng.”

“Understood.”

It was only a distance of one station away.

Sunggoo quickly started to run.



Hammer Guild's Headquarters near Sadahng Station.

This was a high-rise building built after the Dungeon Break, so it was built like a steel fortress. It could prevent most monsters from entering.

From the ground floor up to the 3rd floor, thick steel doors descended to cover all the doors and windows. It stopped the encroaching gray wolves.

It had also been designated as an emergency shelter.

“Hurry hurry! Run!”

The Roused of the Hammer Guild was trying to urge and protect the civilians. One could see Gray Wolves closing the gap behind them.

Hammer Guild's president Park-sahngoh stepped forward.

“Hah-ahp!”

He spread both his hand. It created wind pressure and a gale swept across the wolves, sending them flying.

Korea's best Wind Mage, Park-sahngoh, let out a yell.

“Hurry up and run.”

The civilians quickly headed towards the building. Park-sahngoh mumbled to himself as he saw the swarm of monsters.

“What the hell...”

How could such a thing happen?

Was this caused by the whim of the Dungeons? Or were the Dungeons starting to change?

This didn't fit in with the established convention regarding Dungeon Breaks.

Already cleared and completed Dungeons were Breaking.

"Uh?"

Amongst the civilian, Park-sahngoh's eyes picked out a familiar face.

"Mr. Jung-minchan."

"...President."

They hadn't parted on good terms. Minchan faced his ex-boss, and he gestured his hand towards Kahn-woojin's mother, sister, and Sunggoo's family. They had accompanied him.

"Please head on ahead."

"Aigo. What about you, vice president."

"I'll follow you all soon."

Civilian were of no help in this situation. They had stopped, because Park-sahngoh had called out to Minchan, who had worked in the same workplace as him. Haemin led his family and the guild's families towards the shelter of the Hammer guild.

"Jeez."

There was bitter taste in Park-sahngoh's mouth. An ambivalent feeling swirled around his eyes as he looked at Minchan.

They were of the same age, and Minchan had been an exceptional employee. It seemed the bowl under him had been too small to contain him. He used to be a team leader, yet he had climbed to the position of vice president after moving to Alandal.

“It's dangerous here. Please go on ahead.”

“Yes. Our guild's Roused will join us here soon.”

Park-sahngoh let out a snort of disbelief. Wasn't Alandal Guild basically a one-man team of Kahng-woojin? He was still in the Middle East, so how could he come here? Aside from him, there was a Rank B Roused named Hong-sunggoo, and an ex-military Roused, who had just joined them. Roused of those caliber were overflowing inside the Hammer guild.

The Roused from his company around Park-sahngoh were at least Rank B.

“It's all right. Hurry up and go in.”

“Yes. I'll do so.”

Civilians would only get in the way if they stayed.

The civilians could help them by evacuating to safety and staying put.

“Chet. If only Jinwoo was here...”

The other Rank A of the Hammer Guild, vice president Park-woojin, was at Pusan trying to clear a 6 star Dungeon.

The news of this event was sent to the Support team that had been sent along with him, so he should be coming back to Seoul.

The move didn't mean much, since they would have already cleared the monsters by the time he got here. It seemed Park-sahngoh would have to step forward, and fight the monsters with his company's Roused.

“Let's see you run until sweat comes out of your feet... Uh?”

Park-sahngoh's words trailed off when he saw the being strolling down the middle of the road.

Even if a 6 star Dungeon had Broken, would a being such as this had popped out?

The Boss Monster shouldn't exist in an already captured Dungeon. Even at a glance

from a distance, he could tell it was giving off a boss-like energy.

[Ah-oooooooooh.]

At the bastard's howl, gray wolves started to saunter out from between the buildings. The lead wolf was gathering its pack.

"Isn't that one a little bigger than usual?"

"A little bigger is quite the understatement."

Park-sahngoh frowned as he replied to the Roused, who had spoken up next to him.

The size of the leader was abnormal compared to a normal Gray Wolves.

If a normal one was the size of a passenger car, the leader was about the size of a trailer truck.

It even had a horn on its head, and it was letting out a very serious vibe.

"Shit. We have no idea what will pop out next. Get ready to defend and attack."

Park-sahngho was a Rank A Roused. His team consisted of veteran Rank B Roused. They've experienced going into 6 star Dungeons that had yet to be cleared on several occasions. He had taken down several boss monsters that size so he wasn't afraid.

Moreover, he was at an advantage since there was no entrance restrictions.

"Ooh-roo-roong."

With the leader at the center, the wolves charged forward in a structured formation.

"Whirlwind!"

Hooooooohng!

Park-sahngoh's nickname was the Wind Mage. As befitting of his nickname, the Wind Mage immediately casted his magic towards the running wolves broke their formation. The Guild's physical Roused ran towards them with their weapons out.

Ssss-kuhk, Kwahjeek!

“Kwahng, kuhng!”

“Get bent, please!”

There were sporadic fights breaking out in various places. Hammer guild had the most Roused, but there were a good number of Roused from the mid-sized guilds. They fought back to back with each other.

During all of this, Park-sahngho's attention was solely on the leader of the wolves. If his team and him could occupy this bastard, the clean up of the monsters would go smoothly.

The Capital Defense Units would be here soon.

Everything was going well in the battlefield when a variable appeared.

“Ggee-ahhhhhk!”

Accompanying the goose-bump inducing screech, bizarre creatures made an entrance.

‘Human-faced Bats.’

If its face looked similar to a human, then it might have been considered cute. Unfortunately, the body was also human-sized. It didn't have a beak, but it used its human-like hands and feet to catch its prey. Then, it would drop the prey to kill it. This was how they hunted.

It would be great if they stayed still, while the Roused took care of the wolves. It would be a problem if the Man-faced Bats joined in. In a battle of life and death, the appearance of a distraction could turn the tide of a battle.

“Shit! Magicians shoot whatever you want. The physical Roused will stop the wolves.”

Park-sahnghoh yelled loudly, then he glared at the lead wolf, who was standing still. Park-sahnghoh didn't know what that bastard's aim was. No, he had a hunch. The bastard would jump him if he got distracted.

However, if he only focused on the lead wolf, his side would be at a disadvantage. It

worried him. It seemed his side would take a lot of damage before the other Roused and army showed up.

Hwah-roo-rook!

At that moment, a reinforcement that would stabilize the tilting balance of the battle arrived.

'Didn't I see that face somewhere before?'

Park-sahngoh had a puzzled expression when he saw the magician, who could freely control fire.

"Hah-ahp!"

Sunggoo quickly burned three Human-faced Bats. Then he struck the head of a wolf that had run towards him with its mouth open. The power in his punch was unbelievable for a magician!

Sunggoo frowned as he saw the monsters continuously streamed out towards the street.

'5 star Dungeon Slime.'

The Dungeon Slimes were crawling towards them, and the bastards couldn't be hurt by physical attacks. They came in all kinds of color and they possessed a horrible poison. Moreover, they were capable of Acid Attacks. The fact that they showed up in a city was a calamity in itself.

If they didn't immediately clear the Slimes, it would cause massive damage.

"Wall of Flame!"

Sunggoo put strength into his stomach and spoke an incantation with his hand outstretched. Enough magic drained out of him to make him a bit dizzy, and a long wall of flame was erected where Sunggoo's hand was pointing.

Hwah-roo-roo-rook!

The Slimes couldn't get close, because of the incredible heat. While they were being

held back, the physical Roused quickly moved in to kill the wolves and the Human-faced Bats. Then the magicians would be able to focus their attention on subduing the slimes.

“Let's work hard.”

Sunggoo's action attracted the attention of the Roused, after which they began to fight more energetically.

“Let's stem the flood.”

The Capital Defense Command's helicopters appeared in the sky. When the Roused, the evacuated civilians inside the Hammer guild's building and the civilian trapped inside other buildings saw the helicopters, they all let out a cheer.

The mood of the battle was shifting when it happened.

The lead wolf moved.

[Earth is a very fun place.]

The word that came out of the wolf's mouth burrowed into the surrounding people's head. This was a form of communication that transcended language as its intent was delivered to the humans. Everyone became confused, and few even let out an astonished shout that was closer to a scream.

‘It's a talking wolf?’

[This will be a fun hunting ground.]

He had been observing. He wanted to see how the humans on earth fought.

He had a good idea what they were doing. Moreover, he knew how to fight them.

Trahnet's 72 Commanders.

His name was Juriel of the 2nd Step, and he possessed two Thrones.

He laughed happily.

He would become stronger by hunting. Then, he would challenge the 3rd Step.

The ambient mana on earth was starting to rise, so all he could do was dedicate his body into forming on earth. That was his limit. Even a 3rd Step using 100% power wouldn't be able to materialize on Earth. His entrance into Earth was perfectly timed.

He would occupy the earth's hunting ground first and seize the opportunity to get stronger.

A white light sparkled on the leadwolf's horn, and it swept through the surrounding.

Pah-jee-jee-jeek!

“Goooooooook!”

He had swept the Electric Shock in a wide arc. Those with weak resistance died immediately, and even those with high resistance were shaking their head as their bodies trembled.

“W... we have to stop it.”

Sunggoo's tongue was twisted into a knot. He tried hard to shake off the effect of the shock, but Juliel's second Electric Shock hit Sunggoo's body. It wasn't a widely dispersed attack like before. It was a concentrated attack meant for a single person. It was like being struck by a lightning.

“Ooh-uh-uh.”

His eyes rolled backwards as the white of his eyes appeared. Then Sunggoo immediately fell to the ground.

‘H... hyung-nim.’

His thoughts brushed by him like a kaleidoscope. When he accepted his eventual death, a funny thing happened. The first thing he thought about wasn't his parents. It was Woojin.

I guess I want to live a little bit more?

Sunggoo wanted to see Kahng-woojin.

'Delicious humans are gathered there.'

Juliel's gaze headed towards the Hammer Guild's building. Humans... It was where the supply of his energy was gathered.

Earth was like heaven for Juilel. There weren't any decent 7th Circle Roused here, so they weren't able to resist against his Electric Magic.

Pee-yoooooong, kwahhhng!

The small rockets shot by the helicopter hit its target, but not a single fur on Juliel was harmed.

[How annoying.]

Pah-jee-jeek. Too-too-too-too-too-too.

Electric Shock detonated from Juiel's horn, and the helicopter lost its sense of direction. It started spinning as it descended.

[Ah-oooooooooh.]

Gray Wolves weren't the only monsters gathering from Juliel's summons. The Slimes, Human-faced Bats, and other monsters started to gather. They all submitted to the Commander's prestige.



Capital Defense Command's Emergency War Room.

"Both helicopters we sent have fallen."

"Mmmm. The ground troops aren't there yet?"

"They will arrive at Sadahng Station in 12 minutes."

"Shit."

After the Dungeon Shock, military personnels were placed around various parts of Seoul. Still, it was impossible to mobilize the troops to each region within several

minutes. Moreover, the monsters' rampage had destroyed various roads, and the monsters were still causing havoc. It exacerbated the situation.

"Uh? There is an unidentified object approaching the airspace of Seoul."

"What? Did a flying monster show up?"

"I... it's something different."

The officer read the radar, and he replied haltingly.

"By looking at its speed, it seems to be a missile."

"What!"

The commander's face crumpled into a frown. Which crazy bastard had shot a missile towards Korea? China? North Korea? Or was it Japan?

"Two minutes until target is over Seoul. Please authorize an intercept."

It was an unidentified missile. In the end, the most important thing was to stop it.

"I'll allow it."

"The Missile Defense System is being activated."

The missile must be an ICBM. The ICBM was already almost over the Seoul's skyline. Just by looking at the trajectory, one could tell the missile had re-entered from the earth's atmosphere. How far did they launch it from...

They couldn't do anything about the damage that will be caused from the shock wave of the explosion and the fragments of the missiles that would rain down. Still, if they delayed any longer, the shock wave would completely devastate Seoul. If they failed to intercept it, Seoul might be wiped off the map.

"We've successfully shot it down!"

The red dot on the radar disappeared.



Sunggoo was lying down on the floor, looking up into the sky.

After seeing the very clear sky, he thought it wasn't a bad day to die. In a strange way, it comforted him.

The Electric Shock must have messed with his brain. Sunggoo was blankly staring into the sky when he saw a dot in the sky.

'Uh?'

He had taken Reinforcement Stones like snacks, so his eyesight was above average. If he focused, his eyesight was comparable to a binocular. Sunggoo's gaze focused in on the dot.

It looked like a missile, and there were several fighter jets trailing behind it. The problem was the missile was falling from the sky.

'I guess the government gave up on Seoul.'

Sunggoo really thought this was what had happened. He thought the government wanted to take care of the monsters with a single missile strike.

Kwahng.

However, anit-ballistic missiles shot from the surface intercepted the unidentified missile. It seemed the ICBM didn't hold any warhead as it broke apart with a loud boom. Only the fragments of the missile started raining down to the ground.

Amongst all the debris, there was a man descending from the sky at a breakneck speed.

'Uh uh?'

The person was too far away to make out any details, but it seemed the person was falling towards his direction. When the person was almost upon Sunggoo, Sunggoo's paralyzed lips fell open.

"Hyung... nim?"

The missile flying through the air exploded and hyung-nim was falling from the sky. Moreover, hyung-nim didn't have a parachute on his back.

Kwahhhng!

He fell like a meteor, and the sheer presence of the man made it feel as if an earthquake was happening around them. Everyone's attention was focused on him.

Poo-shi-shi-shi.

There was a crater in the middle of the road. Kahng-woojin walked out as he waved his hand in front of him. Dust was flying everywhere.

Sunggoo suddenly sat up, and he started rubbing his eyes.

It really was Kahng-woojin.

He was supposed to be in the Middle East, yet he was here.

“H... hyung-nim. Did you perhaps ride a missile here?”

“Do you think I rode Rudolf here?”

Kahng-woojin grinned, then looked at the large wolf, Juriel.

“You are the one running amok?”

He heard someone was causing Breaks one after another. Was this bastard the culprit?

Second Step Juriel. Of course, they had faced each other before.

Juriel's body, which had been relaxed, started to shake.

Chapter 101

Juliel's Wilderness (1)

“W... what's happened?”

“Let's talk a little bit later.”

Woojin left Sunggoo and headed towards Juliel.

“Was it you? Were you the one going around and causing Dungeon Breaks?”

Woojin's heart ran cold. When he returned after attaching 6 Shadows to the terrorists of interest, Holy Maiden Melody informed him of the situation in Korea. Daegoo had an unexpected Dungeon Break.

He was quickly getting ready to head back to Korea when he had heard of the broadscale Dungeon Breaks in Seoul. When all the news channels were talking about the situation, Woojin decided to catch a ride on a missile.

With General David's aggressive support, he was allowed to use a ICBM with its warhead removed. He used Dolsae's ability to cobble together several fighter jets and attach it to the ICBM. He had made a rocket taxi.

He didn't need such things like a landing gear.

The Spirit Armor had protected Woojin.

This was the reason why Woojin was able to step onto the soil of Seoul within couple hours of the Sahdahng Station's Dungeon Break.

The existing rules of the Dungeon Break had been turned on its head, and one of Trahnet's Commander Juliel was in front of Woojin's eyes.

In Woojin's memory, this guy wasn't that strong. They had frequently clashed with each other, but he hadn't been too much of a threat.

[I don't believe it...]

Juliel's body shook.

That damn Rashmode.

Rashmode's chance for using his summon magic had come so he had materialized on earth through the summons. However, Rashmode had come back after only a brief time had passed. He hadn't even been able to see the open sky.

Juliel kept asking what had happened to him, but Rashmode refused to say anything. Juliel would have never guessed the reason was the Immortal...

[Why the hell are you here?]

"This is my home."

[.....]

How could such a situation occur?

Juliel had observed this place for a long time. He watched how the humans of earth fought, and he observed how much destructive power the modern weapons held. He also had a good idea of the quality of Earth's Roused.

He had decided to slowly turn this place into his base, but the Immortal had suddenly appeared in front of him.

"How did you cause the Break?"

[What bullshit are you spouting?]

"It feels weird to be given bullshit by a dog."

Juliel's body shook. Juliel was the leader of the proud Gray Wolf tribe yet he was being treated like a dog. It was the most insulting words that could have been said to him.

Moreover, the Immortal have insulted him countless of times before. He was an asshole of the highest order.

“Did you cause the Break?”

[.....]

“I guess not.”

[Oh-ho. You also became Initialized.]

“.....”

He was saying the same thing as Rashmode.

[Koo-hahaha. You really are a human from earth.]

Juliel was in a good mood as he laughed and light started gathering around his horn. The Immortal had been Initialized, so he hadn't recovered his full power yet. Wasn't this the opportunity to take his revenge?

[The favor of Trahnet is with me! Koo-hahaha.]

“What nonsense.”

Woojin frowned as he saw Juliel prepare his Lightning magic.

“Initialization. That damned word.”

That word grated on his nerves. Woojin's class had become advanced, but he did experience a level down. He was recovering quickly, but it bothered him that Trahnet's Commanders noticed it.

“I think you are under a delusion.”

Woojin took out his Warrior's Weapon. His Steel Staff turned into its axe form. Woojin ran towards Juliel. In a blink of an eye, Woojin used 'Sprint' to arrived in front of Juliel.

“If a high schooler became a middle schooler, would that middle schooler lose to an elementary student?”

Woojin swung his axe and aimed for Juilel's head.

Kwahng!

Juliel came face to face with him. He thrust his horn out and clashed with Woojin.

Pah-ji-ji-ji-jeek.

[I knew your arrogance would bring trouble down on your own head.]

Juilel laughed. The Immortal had been the most insolent being on the continent. He was oblivious to his weakened self and he was acting out. This time Juliel would get rid of him once and for all.

Kwah-kwahng, pah-jee-jeek!

A dump-truck sized wolf ran forward. It looked foolhardy for a human to fight the wolf. However, the fight was unexpectedly even. As the fight dragged on, Juliel felt himself being steadily pushed back and felt a sense of desperation inside because of it.

'Had the Immortal always been fighting this good?'

The bastard was taunting him since he wasn't using any magic. Now that he thought about it, he wasn't using his Immortal army, which was considered to be his main source of power.

'So that's how it is. That bastard has lost his Immortal Army!'

Why did this bastard suddenly disappear from Planet Alphen? What happened afterwards?

The Immortal's territory was Alandal.

It was a place where the Immortal Army lived. After he disappeared, the kingdom didn't have a king and there weren't any Knights to take the reigns. The Immortal Army wasn't an army at all at that point. The Undead monsters just roamed around Alandal now.

The Immortal had lost all of his underlings... It wasn't appropriate to call him the King of the Dead any more...

[Ooh ooh ohhhhhhhh!]

The Gray Wolves charged forward at Juliel's roar.

"Koo-roo-roo-roo-roo."

The Gray Wolves showed their teeth as they growled. Woojin smirked when he saw them. The monsters that had been wandering around were all converging to this location. Woojin intentionally backed away.

[Ooh-ohhhhhh!]

Juilel thought Kahng-woojin was trying to retreat since he was at a disadvantage. He let out a much louder howl and gathered the monsters in the vicinity. There were more than Gray Wolves here.

He was Trahnet's commander who possessed 2 Thrones. Various monsters, who had submitted to Juliel's authority, gathered at his call.

They gathered near where Woojin had fallen and created a crater. A tidal wave of monsters crowded around. Woojin turned to confirm the Hammer Guild Headquarter's lower entrance was closing.

While Juliel was gathering his underlings, Sunggoo had received a telepathic message from Woojin. Park-sahngoh and the Hammer guild Roused had all retreated by then.

[Koo-koo. How does it feel to have the tables turned on you?]

Juliel would have never thought he would have the opportunity to attack the Immortal with numerical superiority, yet it was really happening. The bastard would get exhausted and eventually fall as a cold corpse.

He didn't have to do anything. No, he would use his teeth to rip his throat out at the final moment.

Had the Immortal always felt what he was feeling right now?

"Why's the dog barking?"

[Dog... I am a member of the proud Gray Wolf race...]

"A wolf is also a dog. I'm right."

[...Kill him.]

The monsters reacted to Juliel's ferocious will. The Human-faced Bats, Gray Wolves, and other various monsters which had come out of the Dungeon headed towards Woojin. Woojin laughed when he saw this.

"Thank you for gathering all of them for me."

The city was too complex, so it was the worst place to track down and hunt preys. Even if a single monster managed to run away into the sewer systems, it would take an additional several days to capture it. Thus, he couldn't help but feel thankful when all the monsters gathered for him.

"Come out."

Pah-paht.

At Woojin's call, the black smoke coalesced. All the Death Knights were summoned at once.

"Take them all down."

[It's an order from the King!]

Kiba and the other Death Knights summoned their Phantom Steeds. Then they simultaneously casted their summoning circles. There was a rip in space as a black crack opened, and the Skeleton Soldiers under their command jumped out.

"Kee-kee-keek."

The Skeleton Soldiers made bizarre sounds as they appeared, sweeping across the charging monsters. In a flash, the Undead army had swarmed the monsters, and Juliel was taken aback.

[Y... you were hiding them!]

"They say dogs are supposed to be smart, yet why are you so dumb?"

[.....]

Woojin leisurely walked towards Juliel using a bloody path opened by the Death Knights.

It was humiliating. It was too humiliating that he couldn't speak. He wanted to rip the tricky Immortal apart.

"Stop moaning like a little bitch and attack me."

Woojin approached him as he turned his Weapon into a hammer. Juliel quickly set off his thunderbolts.

Pah-jee-jeek!

The electrical attack spread into the surrounding, but the Spirit Armor blocked it all. Juliel disappeared from Woojin's sight for a brief moment. When his vision cleared, Woojin readied himself to receive another attack.

"What?"

Woojin expected him strike out with consecutive attacks, but Juliel was running away.

[Wait and see, Immortal!]

He let out the tired words of assurance predicting his next victory, then he ran away into the subway station. It was questionable as to how such a large body could fit into the entrance.

"Jeez."

Woojin thought about Juliel's nature, since he had countless of run-ins with him. He really did bark a lot like a dog. They had fought a couple dozens of times, but Woojin could count with his fingers how many time he had managed to kill Juliel. Whenever the bastard was a bit at a disadvantage on Planet Alphen, he would turn tail and run.

"Tidy up this place."

[We will uphold your order.]

The Death Knights renewed their efforts and the corpses of the monsters kept mounting one by one. He wanted to chase after Juliel immediately, but he had to kill

all the monsters first while they were bunched up.

If they dispersed once again, it would be troublesome to find them.

“Hyung-nim! I'll help.”

When Juliel disappeared, Sunggoo and the other Roused ran out again.

Too-roo-roo-roo-roo.

Five helicopters with machine guns attached to them showed up, and tanks were soon seen on the roads.

The soldiers showed up and made a wide perimeter. The tanks shot with their cannons into regions where there were unusually large clusters of monsters.

Kwahnng!

The soldiers and the Roused in the surrounding joined forces and the eradication of the monsters took a short amount of time.

“We won!”

The happiness felt from the victory only lasted for a brief moment.

“Hoo-hook. Mother.”

“Ahjin! What will I do without my Ahjin.”

The civilians, who lost their family or friends let out a wail. At a glance, most of the monsters in the surrounding had been eradicated. Still, there were still some monsters who hadn't submitted to Juliel's authority left. These monsters were still causing trouble nearby. It would be awhile before complete eradication could be achieved.

There were a lot of monster corpses on the street, but there were also a lot of human corpses too.

This was the calamity caused by the unannounced Dungeon Breaks.

The people gathered at the Hammer guild's building, which doubled as an evacuation

shelter, started to let out an outcry.

“Please let me out.”

“No. It's still dangerous. Please go back in.”

“My daughter is lying there! At the very least, shouldn't you let me recover my daughter's corpse?”

The monsters weren't entirely eradicated, so why were these people making such a ruckus? The Hammer guild employees were sweating in agony as they tried to assuage the angry civilians.

When the shadow of death tightened the noose around their necks, they had run away since their lives were precious to them. However, now that they were assured they would live, sadness became infectious amongst the people. It hit them like a violent storm.

However, when Woojin suddenly appeared, the people stopped their outcry as if it had been a lie. When Woojin stepped closer to them, the people started retreating backwards, and a path was automatically formed.

When Minchan discovered Woojin, he pushed by the people to come towards him.

“President!”

“I guess you are still alive.”

“.....”

“What about my family?”

“Your mother and sister are all safe.”

He had been worried when he heard Sahdahng Station had Broke yet it seemed they were lucky enough to have evacuated. Woojin patted Minchan's shoulder.

“All right. I'll leave everything here to you.”

“What? You don't want to go meet them?”

There were too many people crowded here, but Woojin's family was amongst the evacuees.

Kahng-woojin shrugged his shoulder.

"You said they are alive."

"Yes. But..."

"It's all right then. I'll be back after I chase down that bastard."

"Yes, sir"

Woojin quickly left the evacuation shelter and Minchan stared blankly at Woojin's figure move away. How could his public and private face be so thoroughly guarded?

'No.'

This felt different.

His family's life had been on the line and he was overly calm.....

Minchan shook his head to dislodge that thought. He went back into the throng of people to find Woojin's family, as well as Alandal's guild members.



Woojin sent the Death Knights and Skeleton Soldiers to the Summon room and he went into the Dungeon by himself. Juliel had quickly run away into this Dungeon.

The Dungeon's secret was that it could be used as a Dimensional Door.

How could a Dungeon have an outbreak before the requisite 30 days?

The Break itself was linked to the balance of the Dimensions.

If one could freely move between the Dimensions, Dungeon Breaks would be happening all the time. Millions of people would die.

Woojin descended the subway station Juliel had run away into.

He decided to chase first, and ask questions later.

When he entered the Dungeon, he heard an announcement that was a bit different from the usual one.

<You've entered into Juliel's Wilderness.>

<It is in an Unassigned State. It is impossible to choose the 'Battle' and 'Intelligence' Mode.>

<You have to choose one of the these modes. 'Visit', 'Infiltration' and 'Clear'.>

“Jeez...”

Woojin's brows became furrowed. This Dungeon itself was Juliel's Dimensional Domain. It was a bit different from the usual announcement he heard when going through a gate, but he had experienced this once with Rashmode.

However, at that time he hadn't been given a choice except the Clear Mode...

“I guess I have no choice.”

In a situation like this, that choice was probably the wisest.

Chapter 102

Juliel's Wilderness (2)

Woojin opened his Point Store to see if there were any items regarding this event. The Point Store had Skill Books but it also sold numerous regular books as well.

[Stewardship of the Dimensional Domain]

“I guess this is it...”

It was manual on how to govern a Dimensional Domain, and the price was 2,000 Achievement Points. However, it wasn't the price that was a problem.

The problem was there was a lock on it, so he wouldn't be able to read it at all.

<Only the Corresponding Grade can have access to it.>

Woojin looked at his Stat Menu to check his Grade Menu. Woojin hadn't paid much attention to it since it had stayed the same. There weren't any numbers or marks. It was empty.

“Whatever.”

It wasn't going to work right now. It wasn't as if he would get more answer from worrying about it.

It would have been better if he had a guide, but it wasn't as if not having a guide would deter him from going forward.

Woojin chose the 'Clear' option.

<You are attempting the Clear Mode.>

<When you complete the Clear, you will be able to earn Achievement Points.>

“Hmmm. This is a bit different.”

He knew what to expect since he had entered Rashmode's Dungeon before. He had thought the Clear Mode was akin to breaking into another house to plunder it. He never expected the rewards to be quite good...

"Is this Trahnet's doing?"

The rules that bastard operated under was more of a mystery than it was understood.

One thing that was for sure was that Woojin had been adrift on a boundless expanse of water, but now he felt as if he had found a compass.

Kahng-woojin's eyes twinkled.

When he passed through the newly formed red portal, he appeared in an open field.

Chilly winds blew across the plains as Gray Wolves wandered around. In the distance, a large purple pillar of light drew Woojin's eyes.

Juliel was over there.

He felt a hunch telling him so.

"Koo-roo-roo."

The Gray Wolves in the surrounding saw Woojin and swarmed towards him. There weren't any features on the terrain. It was basically an open plain. The wolves were adept at fighting in a group, so this was the perfect environment for the wolves to bite and kill intruders.

Unfortunately, this particular intruder also liked wide open plains for battle.

"Open a path for me."

Pah-pah-paht.

At Woojin's command, the black smoke around him coalesced into Death Knights as they were summoned. They summoned their Phantom Steeds, then charged towards the wolves prowling around Woojin.

The Death Knights could summon any number of Skeleton Soldiers they needed, so

the Death Knights summoned a portion of their troops. Woojin only job was to replace a broken Skeleton Soldier or add more Skeleton Soldiers under their command when the Death Knights leveled up.

“Let's go.”

Woojin summoned Shing Shing and he mounted. Bibi was summoned, taking her place on top of Shing Shing's head. Dolsae was in the form of a Golem's Heart, circling around Woojin's head.

The Immortal Army galloped across the wilderness.



A pillar of purple light was extending into the sky. The space above was pitch black so it was questionable to call it a sky. Moreover, one couldn't see the end to the pillar of light. It kept traveling upwards endlessly.

The light was being emitted from an underground building.

It was hard to call it a building. It was basically a cave.

Woojin smirked when he stood in front of the entrance to the cave.

“So he ran away to this place?”

The entrance to the cave was large enough, so only Juliel could go in and out of it. It was too small for all the Immortal Army to enter into it. Woojin got off his Phantom Steed and the Death Knights followed behind him.

The cave wasn't that deep. Soon, they appeared at a space that was the size of a soccer stadium. The unique feature of this place was that the ceiling was open and a large purple gem was sending a purple light into the sky.

Juliel was resting his long body in front of it.

“I thought you were going to run away. Did you give up?”

[I gave up.]

“How unexpected.”

[I have no reason to fight an arduous battle.]

It wouldn't turn out well. Juliel let out a sigh.

[I made a mistake in rashly making a gate to earth.]

Woojin's eyes shone at the word gate. He remembered the words of the Holy Maiden. Her plan had been to obtain a Dimensional Domain. She was going to send an expedition to Alphen after opening a gate.

“I'll be visiting you often from now on to play with you guys.”

[What kind of nonsense are you spouting?]

“.....”

[You really don't know anything.]

When Woojin tilted head in puzzlement, Juliel shook his head.

[If you Clear the Dungeon, the gate disappears. There is no reason for me to face you again.]

When the gate he opened to earth disappeared from his Domain, he would have no business that'll bring him back to earth unless he wanted to open the gate again. He would never take the opportunity to face the terrifying Immortal again.

Should he consider it fortunate that Kahng-woojin had chosen the Clear Mode?

Even if he died here, it would allow Juliel to be reborn once again.

[Let us say our farewell.]

“Are you going to meekly allow me to kill you?”

[That won't be happening.]

Juliel raised his body. Did Juliel's body look bigger on earth or was he mistaken?

[You've made a mistake.]

Sss-ahhhhhh.

The plants growing haphazardly around the plains let out a green energy. It was absorbed into Juliel's body. After receiving the Blessing of the Wilderness, Juliel's body started to become smaller.

He was getting smaller and smaller.

He wasn't actually getting smaller. He was being compressed.

Heat started to pour out of Juliel's body.

“Hoo-oooooh.”

After he let out a ragged breath, Juliel stood on his two feet.

“Werewolf?”

“I just borrowed their outer appearance. Koo-hoohoo.”

Woojin tilted his head.

“A crazy dog?”

“Koo-hooo. I want to tear you into dozen pieces.”

“You don't have the ability to do so.”

“Koo-hoohoo. That's right. If you die here even once, it would be the end for you.”

“Stop barking like a dog.”

Dog. Dog. This bastard kept treating him like a dog.

A red light lit inside Juliel's eyes.

“I'll kill you.”

Juliel let out a cold laugh. He saw the cat next to Woojin run towards him.

Is it his pet?

The cat had a cute and mesmerizing eyes. However, Juliel was in a foul mood, since the owner of the pet was the Immortal.

“Nyahng.”

Juliel kicked the cat that had been running at him.

Shwahhhhhk.

Juliel pushed off one leg and, in a flash, charged towards Woojin. Juliel's front paws had turned into hands, but the hands had sharp and thick nails. The nails were akin to swords.

Kahhhhhng!

Kiba's axe blocked Juliel's claws.

“Annoying pests.”

Kah-ahng, kwahng!

Kiba blocked Juliel's claws on consecutive blows, but he was sent sliding backwards by a kick from Juliel.

It was an overwhelming strength.

[Goo-rooroo.]

Kiba let out a low growl. It seemed his pride was hurt, since he was losing in terms of strength.

Juliel didn't care about the familiars. He kept aiming for Woojin.

His smaller body meant he had gained explosive agility, and he hadn't lost any of his strength. It was amazing.

[You shall not pass!]

Kwahhng!

Ramson's hammer blocked Juliel's attack.

The hammer absorbed the impact, and the damage was turned around against Juliel.

Boooooohng, boohng!

No matter how fearsome a power was, it was useless if one couldn't hit one's target.

Juliel nimbly dodged all of Ramson's attack. He aimed his sharp and long nails for Ramson's skull.

Ramson quickly lowered his head to avoid the blow, but half of his helm was sheared off.

[You dare!]

The enraged Ramson hugged Juiel, and the Death Knight from the side brought down a great sword towards Juliel's neck.

Ggahng.

It was hard to believe this was the hide of an animal. Accompanying the sound, the sword bounced off Juliel. He twisted to his body to escaped. He left the Death Knights behind, and he ran towards Woojin.

'I'll kill him.'

He didn't have the time to tussle with the Immortal's familiars.

This was how one dealt with a Necromancer.

Their familiars would be summoned once again no matter how many times one killed them. However, once the Necromancer was killed, the familiars went back to being a ragtag group of monsters.

[You shall not pass!]

The Necromancer and his familiars seemed well aware of this fact, so they were on constant guard around the Immortal. Juliel used the most minimal movement to arrive in front of his opponent.

'I don't have much time left.'

The Blessing of the Wilderness had a short duration.

It was regrettable, but in turn, it gave Juliel an explosive amount of power.

The Immortal had stepped into his Domain through his own volition. This was a once in a lifetime opportunity to kill him.

'If only I could engage him in a fight.'

If he could shed the annoying familiars, he would be able to kill the Immortal with one blow. He just need to get their first. Juliel had thought through this more than couple dozen of times through the years. This was the way to confront a Necromancer.

He would always lose in a fight for numeric superiority. He needed enough power to overwhelm the Necromancer's familiars.

The Domain's innate effect and the Blessing of the Wilderness would give him that power.

"Die!"

Juliel approached Woojin from the front and extended his claws.

If he had enough time, he would have killed all the familiars. Then, he would have slowly savored the death of the Immortal. However, the Blessing of the Wilderness that was compressing his body was on a time limit, and the end was imminent.

At most, he had 10 seconds.

However, one second would be enough to kill this bastard.

Kah-ahng!

Woojin raised his Steel Staff to block Juliel's claws. Woojin jumped backward as if he

was at a disadvantage in terms of strength. However, he had enough reaction speed to be able to block the attack...

Eight seconds.

Chwahhhk, ggahng!

Before Juliel's claws could break open the head of the astonished Immortal, a Death Knight ran in to take the blow instead.

Kwah-jee-jeek!

Both the weapon and claws burrowed into the Death Knight. The Death Knight's armor was crumpled as he was severed in half.

Six seconds.

He was in a hurry, but he still had some time left. The Immortal's flustered expression said it all. He would be able to kill this bastard.

Shwahhk, kahng!

The bastard's Steel Staff turned into a greatsword, and he blocked Juliel's attack. However, there was too much of a difference in terms of strength, so the great sword was knocked into the air. If Woojin had held onto it, it would have ripped his hands open.

3 seconds.

He won.

Juliel's claws pierced the weaponless Kahng-woojin's heart.

Juliel had killed him.

The Immortal...

"I did it."

The Commanders of the higher Thrones hadn't been able to do it, yet he had done it.

He only possessed two lower Thrones.

Kahng-woojin's moment of failure... He couldn't help but laugh.

"Idiot."

"How..."

"Even if a dog is smart, it is still a dog."

"....."

Juliel's surrounding seemed to fluctuate dizzily as it spun in circles.

His body was slanted upward towards the ceiling and he was looking up at Woojin.

"How..."

"My little devil has a bit of a bad habit."

"....."

Juliel's gaze headed towards the cat.

Pah-paht.

The cat's appearance changed to that of a little demon.

Ah. He remembered now. She was the Illusion Witch.

"It was a hallucination..."

"You danced pretty well."

"....."

Juliel looked around, and the Death Knights were still standing where he had first seen them. They were looking down at him with blank expressions.

Juliel had gotten excited and leaped around by himself...

He didn't even have to look at the stinging wound on his neck to know what had happened.

Juliel fell over as the spear pierced into him. He could feel his chest tightening.

"I'll see you next time."

"Koo-koo. I will never have a reason to see you again."

He'll have to spent a long time in the darkness and the nothingness of death, but he would eventually be revived once again.

Juliel won't ever open a gate to earth again.

"You never know."

Woojin pushed the spear in deeper and completely severed Juliel's breath. A gray light surrounded his corpse, after which he dispersed into the air.

"Hoo. That was dangerous."

"Heh heh. Did I do well?"

"You did."

"That guy always falls for the same trick every time-ahong."

Woojin smirked as he petted Bibi's head.

Juliel's movement was a threat, since he had received the Blessing of the Wilderness. If he wasn't under the influence of the hallucination and Juliel targeted him in earnest, Woojin would have been in danger.

He had Warrior as his dual class, but he had put all of his bonus points into Control and Magic.

Even though he had used the Reinforcement Stones to increase his Stats, he only had a superior body compared to a human Roused. His strength and stamina wasn't high enough to face off against Trahnet's commanders.

Woojin touched the purple gem making the pillar of light at the middle of Juliel's nest.

Shoo-shoo-shoo-shoooong.

When he took out the gem, the pillar of light was withdrawn into the gem being held by Woojin's hand.

<You've earned a Dimensional Fragment.>

Woojin grinned.

He had all 3 pieces needed to obtain a Dimensional Domain.

Chapter 103

Dimensional Domain (1)

Woojin took out the Dimensional Fragments from his inventory.

He gained one at Pyeongyang and one which was given from Melody. He had just found one more right now, totalling to 3.

Weeeeeng.

The fist sized gems rose into the air as it resonated.

The vibrating gems swirled around and combined to create a single gem. Then, it started to slowly descend. As Woojin snatched it out of the air, the bright light disappeared. A purple light vibrated inside the gem as it rippled. The light was swaying as if it was about to flow out of the gem. It was reminiscent of a light trapped inside a glass bottle.

“Mmmm.”

Woojin looked at the gem's info.

<Dimensional Proof>

You can possess a piece of torn Dimension.

“I guess it's not here.”

If he wanted a piece of a torn Dimension as his Dimensional Domain, he had to find the right Dungeon. If a Dungeon was compatible with him, it would react to him on its own volition. There was no reaction from this Dungeon. Maybe it was because this wilderness had been owned by Juliel.

Woojin put the Dimensional Proof inside his Inventory, then he swept his gaze around the surrounding.

He wanted to see if Juliel's Wilderness had trophies like Rashmode's Lab.

"Bibi. Let's look for it."

"All right."

Bibi moved at a trot as she looked all over the wilderness. Woojin also activated his Search Magic, and he carefully looked over Juiel's nest.

There were signs of the earth being disturbed near the corner of the cave. The color of the earth was different as if it was used to cover up something. Woojin could feel powerful mana emanating from below.

Woojin started digging and found a pile of bones buried underneath.

"Mmmm. What the hell..."

Bones of various monsters were there. They all looked the same as if the bones were all part of a specific anatomy.

The bones were the size of a decent sized club, and Woojin could tell this was Juliel's preferred snacks.

Amongst all of the bones, he picked up the large bones emanating the most mana.

<Red Dragon's 3rd Rib>

<Blue Dragon's 3rd Rib>

<Tricolored Gorilla's 3rd Rib>

The Dragon's ribs were massive, and the Tricolored Gorilla's rib was the size of a club. Woojin put away these items that were seeped with mana, then he headed towards Bibi.

"I guess this is it..."

"....."

Woojin looked at what Bibi had found and shook his head from side to side.

“There isn't anything useful here.”

At a glance, he could only see remains of monsters. Basically, it was the monsters' leftover food. There were some miscellaneous items found, but overall, there weren't anything of note.

“I think that's dog hair?”

“Yeah. Let's head out now.”

“Understood, master. May I go around in this form?”

“Mmmm...”

Woojin looked at Bibi.

She was a devil, but her outer appearance was that of a 10 year old girl.

“Until you regain your true form, just stay in your cat form.”

“Heh heh. All right.”

Bibi turned into her cat form, then she disappeared into the Summon Room. The Death Knights also returned to the Summon Room. Woojin picked up the Return Stone that was next to the Dimensional Fragment and exited the Dungeon.

“Hyung-nim!”

Sunggoo was in front of the Dungeon, waiting longingly for Woojin.

“The Dungeon Breaks are happening continuously. If things continue as is right now, I'm afraid something will happen to Seoul.”

“Where's it happening?”

“The Breaks are keep happening along the 4th line. I heard the news on the radio just a moment ago, and the Yongsan Station is Breaking right now.”

“Organize the surrounding.”

"Yes, hyung-nim. Please be careful."

The roads were a mess, and it was blocked with destroyed cars. He won't be able to get anywhere on a car. Woojin summoned his Phantom Steed, Shing shing.

Heeeeeeeeng!

The Phantom Steed jumped between the cars as it ran down the road.

The monsters were rampaging everywhere and there weren't enough Roused and soldiers to hunt them. It was a common sight to see civilian being chased down by monsters.

"Go kill them."

[We obey your order.]

Woojin rode down the road on his Phantom Steed, sending out his Death Knights every time he saw monsters.

"It's been only 5 years since the Dungeon Shock, so why is everything still like this?"

It had only been 5 years ago. Half the population of Seoul had been killed.

They advertised the success of Dungeon Businesses and the fact that Seoul was safe instead of preparing for future Dungeon Breaks.....

The first one could be considered an accident, but when it happened for the second time, everyone was at fault.

At the very least, they shouldn't have built the residential areas near the Dungeons.

"Chet. Go kill those guys over there. If people start attacking you guys, just go back into the Summon Room."

[As the Monarch commands!]

Each of the Death Knights spread out to hunt down the monsters. Their outer appearance wasn't that much different from Undead Monsters, so the Roused might attack them by mistake. This was why they were ordered to immediately return

to the Summon Room.

When Woojin arrived at the Yongsan station, it was in a complete pandemonium. There were monsters of various shapes and sizes lining the streets. It seemed as if several entrances nearby had Broken out.

“It would have been great if I had Jaenis...”

Amongst his Immortal Army, Jaenis was the best in terms of firepower. He couldn't help but feel the loss when he was confronted with a situation like this. Fortunately, he was leveling fast that it seemed his days of meeting Jaenis wasn't far off.

“Go, Dolsae.”

Weeeeeng.

It hadn't been long since the Dungeon Break had happened, so the place was crawling with monsters. Dolsae flew toward this place.

Chulkuk, Chulkuk!

The nearby vehicles gathered in a single location to make a large Steel Golem. It didn't have firepower like the missiles and machine guns, but the Steel Golem itself was enough to crush the monsters.

If Woojin joined in, the monster hunting would become faster but it would end up being endless. One doesn't pail the rising water. Instead, one had to block the leak.

“I don't know who it is, but once I catch him...”

Woojin had no idea how someone was causing a Break. However, he'll be able to find out the reason and method when he caught the culprit.

Woojin rode Shing Shing towards the North.

“Shit.”

Monsters were pouring out from a Dungeon Break that happened right now. Woojin summoned his Bone Spears to make a Wall of Bones near the entrance. He imprisoned the monsters.

“Koo-roo-rook!”

Kwahng, kwahng!

The Wall of Bones would be broken soon by the rampaging monsters, but it would give a little bit more time for the people to evacuate. There was an evacuation announcement earlier, so there weren't a lot of civilians who hadn't run away.

“Is that the next one?”

<Seoul Station>

Woojin looked at the Seoul Station.

He had to find out why the already cleared Dungeons were Breaking. Woojin once again summoned the Death Knights who had returned to the Summon Room after they finished their missions. He sent them towards the monsters that were about to escape the Bone Prison.

Woojin tried to predict the next Break, so he headed towards the Seoul Station.

‘Why is this happening?’

He wanted to know why the Dungeon Breaks were happening.

This couldn't be a natural phenomena. Other places were fine yet Seoul, Korea was in a mess. Moreover, the Break was happening in order instead of Breaking at the same time.

‘Someone is artificially creating the Dungeon Breaks.’

It had been 5 years since the Dungeon Shock.

This was the first instance where cleared Dungeons went into a Break.

So what had changed in all that time?

‘Rashmode. Then Juliel.’

Trahnet's commander.

They started showing themselves.

Even if they were mere 1st or 2nd thrones, the fact that they had showed up in this place was important. Soon the 3rd throne would show up, and the Mana level on earth would increase at a much faster rate. The vassals of the upper echelon thrones would be showing up.

‘Someone is controlling this.’

He needed to know what method was being used so he could prevent this in advance. The lack of knowledge frustrated him.

If this was caused from a different Dimension, the Dungeon Break wouldn't have happened consecutively down the road. If a Commander had a hobby of looking at the map of the subway line, this might be plausible. This led him to believe that the switch for the Dungeon Breaks were being flipped from earth.

Someone was moving down the subway line.

Woojin waited for a long time. However, none of the entrances to the Seoul Station Broke, so he put more energy into his senses.

‘Does it need more time?’

If one looked at the pattern of the Break, the next target was the Seoul Station. However, it wasn't occurring yet. Did the act of causing a Dungeon Break take a lot of time?

Woojin waited an extra 30 minute but the Dungeon Break didn't occur.

‘I'm sure.’

The only thing that had changed was that Woojin had arrived at Seoul Station ahead of time.

Woojin was now sure that the Dungeon Break was caused by someone, and this culprit had seen Woojin. It had caused this unknown person to stop. If this person realized Woojin was waiting for him here, he might take a roundabout route to head towards another Dungeon.

Woojin fine-tuned his senses as he expanded it. The Death Knights and the Roused who had taken care of the monster wave from before were heading toward Woojin.

“Mr Kahng-woojin.”

“...?”

“I'm the vice president of KH Guild, Lee-myungjin. I've heard a lot about you.”

“I'm the president of Joas Guild, Oh-taegyu. It is an honor to meet someone I've only seen through the tv.”

“My name is Kim-chuljin. I'm with the Route Guild. It is a great honor to meet.....”

The battle had just ended. The monsters couldn't run away after being penned in. The Death Knights and the Roused subjugated the monsters, but...

After clearing the monsters, the Roused discovered Woojin and scuttled over to give their greetings.

Several of them were looking at him with envy, and the rest looked at him as if he was a celebrity. Their eyes were filled with wonder and curiosity.

They were well acquainted with Woojin, but Woojin didn't know any of them.

He wasn't some celebrity that need to worry about his fan's feelings...

“Why don't we go catch more monsters?”

“Other Roused should have mobilized towards the other side.”

The Capital Defense Command's Special Roused team, and the Roused from various guilds were quickly brought into the regions with the Dungeon Breaks. Sadahng station was the first Break, so the casualties were the heaviest there.

The other locations were somewhat able to predict which stations would break, so a lot of the civilians in the north of the Han River was evacuated. This resulted in very few casualties. Moreover, the Roused were called to the region to join the hunt, so everything was resolved quickly.

"Do you think I can take a selfie with you?"

"If you want to use it as your portrait when you are dead, I'll let you take it."

"....."

Every Roused shut their mouth at Woojin's brutal words. Woojin looked around his surrounding as he frowned.

There was a female mage in her 20s possessing a small wand with a crystal embedded on it.

Woojin looked at her. When their eyes met, her eyes turned wide like a bunny from surprise.

She acted as if she was suddenly on camera. She looked at the surrounding people to check Woojin was looking at her.

Woojin frowned as he took steps towards the woman.

"W... why?"

When Woojin walked straight towards her, the flustered woman took a step back.

"It would be best if you stay still."

"....."

The woman felt like she couldn't breath at Woojin's words. It felt as if she was going to be sucked into Woojin's eyes. His eyes was like that of a tyrannical wild beast. Her feet never froze like this even when she had faced an ogre.

Woojin approached the woman and punched the woman in the face.

Kwah-jeek!

She hadn't really expected to be hit, so the woman fell backwards. She was sprawled on the floor. The surrounding bystanders were shocked. They knew he was buck-wild, but not to this degree.....

Everyone looked at each other to see if they should stop this or not. While they were hesitating, a strange sight was seen by their eyes.

The outline of the woman was blinking and swaying.

Woojin used the end of his Staff to brush back the woman's hair. The edges of a hood appeared as it got caught on the end of the Staff, and it was pulled backwards.

When the hood was taken off, the transparent cloak came into view, and the woman was nowhere to be seen. Instead, a red-nosed Lee-sahngoh was revealed.

"Koo. How did you know?"

Lee-sahngoh let out a bloody laugh.

He had spent a fortune to buy the Cloak of Illusions.

"I have an expert on my side."

Woojin laughed as he summoned his Steel Staff.

Chapter 104

Dimensional Domain (2)

"Koo-kook. You hit me, just because I disguised myself a little bit. I have to give it to you. You have a really rotten personality."

Lee-sahngho shrugged his shoulders and looked around his surrounding. Woojin smirked.

No, he swung his Staff as he laughed.

Puh-uhk!

Lee-sahngho jumped back in surprise. Woojin's staff followed after him. In the end, it hit Lee-sahngho's side.

"Fuck!"

What an ignorant son of a bitch. Regardless of being Iello's vassal, he just really wanted to kill this son of a bitch.

Son of a bitch, Kahng-woojin.

"What are you doing! Why did you hit me?"

"Since you've sinned greatly, you have to die."

Woojin's Steel Staff transformed into its Spear form. Lee-sahngho swallowed his saliva when he saw Woojin's serious eyes.

'He really means it.'

It seemed Woojin had really decided to kill him.

Lee-sahngho looked around his surrounding. Numerous Roused were distancing themselves, as they had no idea what was going on. They were eyeing the two of them.

"Hah. Fuck. What kind of mortal sins did I commit? You are attempting a murder."

Woojin smirked.

It was pointless to argue with someone who would be dead soon. He was holding a conversation with a corpse.

Shwahhhhk. Ggahng.

Lee-sahngho blocked the Spear that had been thrust towards him by Woojin. This sight made Woojin's eyebrows arch a little bit. Lee-sahngho was a human with this much reaction speed?

'Fuck. That ignorant son of a bitch.'

Lee-sahngho was taken aback by the fact that Woojin didn't care if there was an audience watching. However, he was confident. He had the power given to him when he had become a vassal of Iello. This bolstered Lee-sahngho's confidence.

Lee-sahngho pointed to his surrounding with bloodshot eyes.

"Even if I have sinned, don't I get a trial? Who the hell are you to kill me!"

Woojin just grinned when he saw Lee-sahngho's tantrum.

Woojin could feel Lee-sahngho's evil and dirty soul tremble.

Woojin took a step forward.

Lee-sahngho retreated a step.

It was real. He was going to stab him for real.

This crazy son of a bitch was really trying to stab him.

'Does he suspect something?'

What was his reasons?

Does Woojin know that he was the culprit causing the Dungeon Breaks?

Everytime he moved to a different location he had used the Illusion Cloak to change his appearance.

Lee-sahngho worries were a mile long, but Kahng-woojin's worries were extremely short.

Poo-oohk!

“Huh-oohk.”

Crazy son of a bitch. He really was a crazy bastard.

The blade of the spear passed between his ribs to embed deeply into his lungs. Lee-sahngho looked at Kahng-woojin with bloodshot eyes. His reaction speed couldn't be compared to before as he received power from Iello as his vassal. No matter how much his reaction speed increased, he couldn't dodge Woojin's attack.

‘Fuck. Ignorant son of a bitch.’

It felt as if the confidence that had been filled to the brim inside his chest had dropped to the floor.

How far has this bastard progressed?

Is this guy really human?

It was a fair question. No one on earth had seen the Illusion Cloak in action, so how could Kahng-woojin have known he was the one going around causing the Dungeon Breaks?

“How did you find out?”

“.....”

How did he know? He went to the Middle East to gather information, and he had come back. Woojin twisted his spear. It caused the wound to widen further; blood started to pour out.

“Koo-oohk.”

Lee-sahngho's concentration was faltering, so the thought of using his telekinesis didn't even occur to him. Moreover, he wasn't confident that the attack would work on Woojin.

"Fuck. The world is so unfair. Koo-kook. No matter how great you are, you won't be able to stop it. Even if it isn't me, someone else will cause more Breaks."

"What?"

"Koo-koo-kook. You won't be able to stop the destruction of this world. Those beings are gods. The gods are trying descend onto this plane!"

"....."

Woojin furrowed his forehead.

"Koo-koo-kook."

Lee-sahngho laughed. He laughed as he coughed up blood. In the end, everyone would die. He was just going to die a little bit earlier. He was fortunate enough to see Kahng-woojin's flustered expression.

"How did you cause the Break?"

"Ggoo-kook, ggoo-roo-roo."

After throwing up blood, Lee-sahngho's eyes flipped backwards. Woojin took out a soul that had been stored inside the Soul Armor, and he healed Lee-sahngho. Lee-sahngho opened his eyes wide when his body was suddenly overflowing with energy, and his fading consciousness snapped back into place.

Pooh-oohk.

"Koo-ahhhhk!"

When Woojin withdrew the Spear, blood fountained into the air. However, he once again sent a soul to quickly heal Lee-sahngho again.

Woojin grabbed the back of Lee-sahngho's neck.

"Koo-ooh-ooh. Why are you saving me? Why?"

If he was going to be killed, why was Woojin keep trying to save him? It didn't matter if Lee-sahngho made a fuss or not. Woojin dragged him to the nearest Dungeon.

One of the Roused, who had been watching, approached them.

"I... I'm not sure what is going on, but do you need some help?"

"I need none."

Woojin dragged Lee-sahngho towards the Dungeon.

He didn't mind killing Lee-sahngho. The bastard sinned enough to deserve death.

However, it wasn't necessary to show everyone the sight of him interrogating Lee-sahngho.

When Woojin entered the Dungeon, he roughly tossed Lee-sahngho.

Kooh-dahng-tahng.

"What the hell are you trying to do?"

"Did you cause the Dungeon Break?"

"...Weren't you trying to kill me because you knew I did it?"

"I didn't know."

"Then why the hell were you trying to kill me!"

Lee-sahngho felt aggrieved. Woojin had been hellbent on killing him, therefore he had assumed that Woojin knew he caused the Dungeon Breaks...

"You are the one who tried to kill me first. I didn't die, and now I am taking my revenge."

"....."

“You are the one who put out a request for a hit in the Middle East.”

“.....”

Lee-sahngho became mute. He had used a broker in the Middle East who was known for his sure handedness in handling business. It seemed the broker had left some kind of trail, and Kahng-woojin was well aware of everything. If it was going to turn out like this, why the hell did he have to use a burner cell phone to contact him...

“Even though I will kill you eventually, I want you to squeal on how you found out about how to cause the Dungeon Breaks.”

Lee-sahngho let out a bloody laugh. Is that all this bastard wanted?

“Do you think I will tell you?”

Woojin's bloody smile deepened.

“Try enduring this.”

Woojin raised his Steel Staff.



Bibi looked ridiculous wearing the black robe. She was wearing adult clothes that didn't fit her. Her sleeves were too long and the hem of the robe was dragging on the floor. However, she smiled brightly as if she couldn't be more happier about it.

“Heh heh. I never thought I would see this clothes on earth.”

“You like it?”

“Of course. It's my clothes.”

Bibi used to always wear this cape as if it was her uniform.

The Illusion Cape that Lee-sahngho had a lot of difficulty in acquiring was taken by Woojin and given to Bibi.

“I already know all the relevant information. Just wake him.”

"Heh heh. All right."

Lee-sahngoh was on the floor moaning as his eyes rolled back. Bibi used her power on him.

"Huh-oohk, huhk!"

Lee-sahngoh awoke in surprise, acting as if he had seen a ghost. He backed away from Woojin. His eyes were full of fear as he looked at Woojin.

It was only a dream but he had dreamt about Woojin beating him for 1 year. The fear he felt...

"Please just kill me now."

Woojin approached him with his axe in hand. Lee-sahngoh lay down on the floor flat on his stomach.

"P... please let me leave. I'll talk. I'll tell you everything."

"I already know it all."

"What?"

Woojin brought down his axe on Lee-shangho's neck. The head was separated from the body. The head was rolling when it was surrounded by a gray light.

Choo-choo-choot.

Woojin clicked his tongues as he saw the body disappear as if it had combusted.

"I guess they can bring humans from earth to their side now."

He became Iello's vassal?

Woojin also learned how he had caused the Dungeon Breaks.

When he became Iello's vassal, he wasn't attacked by the monsters. He used the Return Stone to break down the barrier, basically unlatching the door to let the monsters out.

"Still, we can be a tad bit more relieved now."

"It'll still continue to happen."

The monsters were able to touch the Return Stone only after 30 days had passed. Lee-sahngho had been able to possess the Return Stone from the simple fact that he was a human from earth.

He had died and disappeared, since he was on Trahnet's side now. He would be revived but he wouldn't be a human of earth anymore.

He would only be Iello's vassal, who was one of Trahnet's 72 commanders.

From the perspective of earth, he was now an outsider.

From now on, Woojin would have to kill anyone who fell for Trahnet's scheme to become his vassal.

"Let's start heading out."

"All right."

She folded her long sleeves, then pulled up the hem of the cloak to tie it around her waist. She looked like she was swaddled in a blanket, but this was the most jovial state he had seen her be recently.

Woojin went to the lower floors of the subway station to gain the Return Stone. He took care of all the monsters that came at him, but he couldn't find the Return Stone even when he reached the lowest floor.

"Is this a high rank Dungeon?"

It would be a little bit more tedious, but there weren't any Dungeons Woojin couldn't clear now. He ascended to the entrance where the barrier was present and a red portal had already formed.

Woojin passed through the portal.

Weeeeeng.

After the momentary buzzing and dizziness passed, he saw the appearance of the high rank Dungeon.

It was a wasteland with occasional reeds growing.

He didn't see any monsters.

"Mmmm."

There were several mountains piercing high into the sky like blades. Amongst them, the one with the highest peak was letting out a green light into the sky. It seemed the Return Stone was there.

It was too far off to walk to it.

Woojin summoned Shing Shing and got on.

Too-dooh-dook.

Woojin sped across the wasteland that was scattered with shriveled trees here and there.

"What's the basic monsters here?"

He had entered without looking up this Dungeon, so he had no information on this Dungeon.

Woojin's curiosity was satiated not too long after he started galloping across the wasteland.

"Kee-ahhhhhk!"

Accompanying a bizarre cry, monsters appeared from the sky.

He was wondering why the field didn't hold any monsters. It seemed the monsters had their nests at the pointy, knife-like mountains instead of the field.

Several dozen forms appeared in the sky, and they were flying towards him.

They were a good distance away, but their forms were already bigger than a hawk.

Their identities were Wyverns.

"So this is a Biryong's nest?"

Several dozen Biryongs appeared in this Dungeon.

This was probably a 6 star Dungeon. It was a chance to raise his EXP by a significant amount.

Shoo-shook!

Woojin summoned his Warrior's Weapon as he rode Shing Shing.

He transformed it into a Bow.

When he pulled the string, a magical arrow was formed and loaded.



He arrived at the top of the mountain.

It seemed this wasn't a reset Dungeon. The Wyvern Boss Monster nor the other types of monsters appeared. It was unfortunate, but there was nothing he could do. Still, he had gone up a level, and he found out this was a pretty good Dungeon. He would have to come here several more times in the future.

There was an abandoned old castle on top of the mountain.

"Master. Isn't it a little bit creepy here? It feels as if a ghost is going to pop out-ahong. Ooh ooh."

Bibi's body shook, and she looked around the surrounding with big round eyes.

Woojin smirked.

It was a thread of conversation that wasn't befitting a tiny devil and a necromancer.

It was obvious Woojin would be dreaming nightmares about ghosts tonight.

"Over there. Go check for Artifacts, just in case."

"All right. Let's go, Dolsa-jjing."

Weeeeeng.

Bibi and Dolsae roamed everywhere around the old castle. Woojin started walking as he moved towards the green light.

He walked past the uprooted garden and a building that looked to be a stable. Then he stepped into the castle.

The door to the entrance had been destroyed, and he could see the spider-web filled inside of the castle.

An unknown person's portrait had been burned, and only the upper edges of the picture frame was survived. There was a small stage in the middle of the large hall, and there was the remnant of a broken throne there.

"Chet. Who the hell builds a castle on top of a mountain?"

The Dungeons were based on places that exists. It was a ripped away piece of Dimension.

This castle had an owner before Trahnet had invaded it.

Woojin picked up the Return Stone that had been placed on top of the throne.

Weeeeng.

At that moment, the Return Stone in his hand shook, and it let forth a light. He hadn't taken it out from the Inventory, yet the Dimensional Proof had popped out by itself. It rose into the air and mingled with the Return Stone as if it was playing tag. Then, the Dimensional Proof started to circle around the Return Stone akin to the moon circling around earth.

<Synchronization Probability 72%, would you like to declare the Wyvern's Nest as your Domain?>

Woojin rubbed his chin as he read the information which had popped up in front of his eyes.

Was this what it meant to come in contact with a Dungeon that suited him?

Woojin rub his chin as he worried over the decision.

Chapter 105

Dimensional Domain (3)

“What the heck is the Synchronization Probability?”

Woojin was rubbing his chin when he saw and read the explanation located at the bottom of the window.

It was written that he would be able to gain territory equal to his Synchronization Probability.

“That's not too bad.”

Woojin pressed the 'Domain Declaration' button on his Information Window.

<You have declared the Wyvern's Nest as your Dimensional Domain.>

<Before the Ranking can be recorded, would you like to change the name?>

Did he even need to think about it? Of course, it was Alandal.

<Kahng-woojin has become the lord of Alandal.>

<Kahng-woojin's Alandal is being recorded into the Ranking.>

<After the 30 days Stabilization Period of the Domain is up, you will receive challenges from Adventurers. If you fail in your defense, you will lose your Dungeon Entrance. Part of the Domain's possessions may be looted.>

<After the protection period of a new Lord passes 30 days, you may receive requests from other lords for the Domain Battle... >

Woojin rubbed his chin.

He now understood the meaning of all the Modes that was listed before he entered Juliel's Dungeon. Several things suddenly made sense to him. It also explain the

principle behind the structure of the Dungeons.

'The Dungeon itself is the Entrance. When someone clears it, one loses that Entrance.'

Dungeons were the gateway for the Dimensional Domain, and one's real form could materialize there. This was why they stuck to every Dungeon like tentacles of an octopus. Also, if one lost all of one's Dungeons, the Dimensional Domain would be destroyed.

The 1~3 star lower ranked Dungeons he cleared was the Entrance itself.

The 4~6 star high rank Dungeons and the Red Portal was a medium used to move to the Dimensional Domain.

"So starting from the 7 star Dungeons, Trahnet's Commanders..."

He had no way of knowing if a 7 star Dungeon had been linked to earth yet. Nothing would come from worrying about it in the present, so Woojin looked at the throne in front of him.

"I don't have a Return Stone..."

He had only cleared Dungeons owned by other beings, so he didn't know how to exit his Domain. At a glance, the throne was letting out a serious amount of magical energy, so he sat on it.

Kooooooooohng.

The castle shook as there was a large vibration. Suddenly, it felt as if he was having an out-of-body experience. It felt as if his soul was being pulled out.

"Hoop."

Woojin's sight cleared. His surrounding had moved and he was viewing his Dimensional Domain in its entirety. It was like a large island with its edges sheared off.

'I guess the amount that was lost depends on the Synchronization Probability.'

He knew the precise number even though he hadn't measure it. He had lost 28% of his

Domain.

The Dimensional Domain had become more compact, and that wasn't the only thing that had been lost.

Several menu automatically popped up in front of Woojin.

<Domain Info>

<Dungeon Info>

<Domain Management>

<Troops Management>

<Domain Shop>

Woojin opened the Information Windows in order.

<Dimensional Domain - Alandal>

Lord : Kahng-woojin

Ranking : 1317

Energy : 38%(115,340/300,000)

Vassals : 0

Domain Population : 0

Troops : Wyvern, Steel Rhino

Possessed Dungeon: 1

<Dungeon Info - Seoul Station's 1st Exit>

Energy : 100% (10,000/10,000)

Troops : Giant Spiders, Venomous Insect

<Domain Management>

You can appoint a guardian, and you can accept immigrants, who are wandering around the Dimensions.

You can change the terrain of the Domain, and you can also decorate the castle.

You can go to war and battle with a different Domain.

You can acquire a new Dungeon in exchange for a single Dimensional Fragment.

You can manage the Domain from here.

<Troops Management>

The forces needed to protect the Domain and Dungeons has to be assigned.

Always be aware to make sure you aren't short of troops in the Domain.

You can purchase troops from the Store, and you can also accept immigrants.

The Dungeon is the first obstacle in repelling the pesky visitors.

Dungeon Energy is consumed when you have to replace the exterminated troops.

Once the available Dungeon Energy is consumed, the troops will not be replenished.
You have to recharge the Energy beforehand.

You can purchase the troop cards in the store.

Domain Troops : Wyvern 37, Steel Rhino 241, Fuko Monkey 471

Dungeon Troops : Giant Spider 42, Venomous Insect 132

<Domain Store>

You can purchase everything you can imagine.

“Whew.”

Woojin carefully read the windows and shook his head from side to side. Until this moment, he hadn't fully grasped the principle behind the Dungeons. Now he felt like he understood it. The Dungeon itself was merely a gateway for the lords.

If the lower rank Dungeons were the empty spaces, the high rank Dungeons were the gateway.

"If an Adventurer succeeds in clearing the Dungeon, he would be able to earn the Return Stone? So that's how it is."

Once the Return Stone is protected for 30 days, one could go on the offensive. The troops of the Domain could be sent out.

It was the Dungeon Break.

It unlocked the locked door of the Dungeon.

Woojin used the Dungeon Search function inside the Dungeon Management window. It resulted in over several dozen Domains being listed, and there was a record of hundreds to thousands of Dungeons listed. One needed a Dimensional Fragment to buy them.

Amongst them, there were also Dungeons from Planet Alphen listed there.

If he wanted to go to Alphen, he would have to buy one of them.

"This..."

Woojin frowned.

"This is quite frustrating."

He couldn't help but feel as if he's been had by Trahnet's hoax.

"So he set up the board like this from the background?"

The Break was caused to earn the Dungeon Energy, and the monsters went out to hunt...

"Hoo-ooh."

He was so mad that it felt as if steam was rising out of him. Moreover, Trahnet's commanders..... This explained why all the commanders didn't join forces under a single command to invade Alphen.

"They were fighting between themselves."

Dimensional Battle. Alphen was just a new hunting ground for them. They needed a hunting ground to gather enough Energy to try for the higher Thrones.

Earth was in a similar situation.

"Mother fuckers."

Unbidden curse words flew out.

Woojin grinded his teeth as he wondered if Trahnet had a material body.

"I'll fuck you up."

The problem wasn't about protecting earth. No, that was an impossible task.

It wasn't about putting up a security grille. He had to catch and beat all the thieves.

He didn't care if they were sovereigns or whatever. He'll beat all the bastards who opened a gateway to earth.

Woojin opened the Domain Store to buy the troop cards of the monster he would deploy.

It was the Skeleton Warriors and the Skeleton Magicians.

He wanted to purchase the card for the higher rank Undeads, but it wasn't available for purchase.

There was a limit on the rank of monsters he could deploy inside the Dungeon.

<Dungeon Troop Record>

Troops Assigned : 0/300

Reset Energy : Skeleton Soldier 3, Skeleton Magician 4, Giant Spider 3, Venomous Insect 2

Woojin decided to deploy 100 Skeleton Warriors, and 10 Skeleton Magicians.

When the Adventurers enter the Dungeon, 110 Skeletons would be summoned and the Skeletons would be able to stop them.

If all the Skeletons were destroyed, he would have basically wasted 340 Dungeon Energy.

Afterwards it would form the Red Portal that will allow the Adventurers entry into his Dimensional Domain.

On the other hand, if one was successful in beating the Adventurers, one would earn Dungeon Energy that was equivalent to the quality of the Adventurers.

There were two ways to think about this. Instead of wasting Energy beforehand, one could keep the Dungeon empty. It might be more economical to kill them all when they cross into the Dimensional Domain. On the other hand, one could place strong forces in the Dungeon to prevent anyone from ever getting to the Dimensional Domain. The Energy would be used to make the Dungeon an ant lion's pit.

Woojin was still new at this and he has never had to deal with an intruder yet. Woojin wanted to do an experiment and decided to assign the 110 troops.

“The defense of the Domain.....”

Woojin decided to purchase the Wyverns.

He bought troop cards to set up the Dungeon Defense. As the words indicated, he was basically buying the troops for his Domain. This was akin to bringing in mercenaries by consuming the Energy.

The interesting part was that 'Human' also existed on the sales catalogue.

“Hmmm.”

Woojin's eyes narrowed when he saw the Domain Information.

It cost 300 Energy to purchase a single Wyvern. He had to use 3000 to buy 10 Wyverns. The problem was the total number of troops he could deploy decreased with such a move.

“Jeez.”

There was a close relationship between the Dungeon Energy and the troops deployed in the Domain.

Depending on the amount of Dungeon Energy, the number of troops that could be deployed could be increased.

As the Energy increased, one would be able to assign more forces to the Domain.

It was ironic since the purchase of troops consumed the Dungeon Energy.

“This is why they are trying so hard to hunt.”

If one used all the Energy, the number of forces one could dispatch decreased. Moreover, if one used cheap and weak troops, one would become a target for Dimensional Battle. As preposterous as it might sound, the Adventurers might be able to rob the Domain too.

“What? There is a 30 day protection period?”

A protection period was given to the newly made lord. After thinking about it for a brief moment, he decided on how he will dispatch his defense force. Then he made a conscious decision not to think about the Domain. His vision moved and the sight of Woojin sitting on the lord's throne came into view.

“Hoo-ooh.”

He took in a deep breath when he felt the slight dizziness. It was similar to the alien sensation he felt when he used Soul Swap with Ggaebi.

Woojin thought about the 'Stewardship of the Dimensional Domain' manual book he hadn't been able to open because of the lock.

“Let's see.”

Level : 75

Name : Kahng-woojin

Class : Necromancer(Advanced), Warrior

Rank : Lord

Achievement : 713,219

Magic : 1320/1320 Stamina : 240/240

His rank had been 'Unassigned' before, but now it had changed into 'Lord.'

"So I could probably read it now?"

Woojin opened his Inventory to take out the book.

Zzoooohng.

"Uh?"

Space crumpled within itself and three enormous doors appeared behind Woojin's throne. The blank wall suddenly held a red, black, and white door.

"What the hell?"

He was confused by the sudden appearance of the doors. At that moment, the sound of an announcement rang out.

<You've taken seat on the Twisted Space. Your Inventory and Dimensional Storage will be integrated.>

"....."

Woojin frowned after he opened up his Inventory. He had diligently expanded his sub-dimension by purchasing the Expansion Bags from the Achievement Store. His sub-dimension space of 100 columns expanded into an almost unlimited space.

It seemed the sub-dimension itself had morphed into the Domain's storage room. He

wasn't necessarily thrilled with this development.

"What if someone plunder and steal everything?"

If his Dimensional Domain was attacked, and if he lost in the Dimensional Battle, he was sure his items would be plundered. Woojin shrugged his shoulders. It was the end anyways if he died. He didn't plan on letting anyone have his Domain, so it just meant his Inventory space had become almost unending. It wasn't a bad development.

The Inventory still worked like before. He was able to put in and take out items easily.

He took out the manual book called "Stewardship of the Dimensional Domain". The lock had finally been opened and it was possible for him to read it.

He sat on a chair, and he carefully read the manual. After 30 minutes, he closed the book.

"Those sons of bitches."

Trahnet. Woojin didn't know who he was, but he would most definitely kill him if they ever meet someday.

Trahnet had put this in place quite well.

Then there was Trahnet's commanders. He now understood what the 72 steps was.

They weren't lords. They were on the level of being sovereigns.

If one possessed one Throne, then one was on the 1st step. One could possess up to 72 Thrones, then one could reach the 72nd step..... They were fighting for the higher Thrones to become the Great Lord. They were playing an unending competition.

Moreover, Woojin had to become a sovereign to be able to possess lords as vassal. He would be able to own up to the number of Thrones he possessed.

"Well, I'll play with you guys."

Since the game board is already in place, Woojin would have real fun using it. If he wanted to flip the board in the end, he needed to know more about it.

Before Woojin put away the book into his Inventory, he approached the doors that had formed behind him. When he opened the red door, a large storage room was revealed. All of his items were arranged neatly inside. He tried tossing the book into the room.

The record of the book being stored was shown on his Inventory Window. Woojin nodded his head.

“I can put in and take out items through this door.”

It didn't matter if he directly brought the item into the storage room or he used the Inventory Window like he did before. Both methods were using the same storage space now.

“This... It's locked.”

Woojin walked towards the white door which was immediately behind the throne. He had no idea if this door also had a Rank lock. The manual didn't talk about the 3 door at all.

Woojin stood in front of the black door on the right.

“This one is open.”

Since there wasn't a lock, Woojn opened the door.

When the black door opened, he saw a large space with marble floors, and he saw a lot of Skeletons lined up in place.

“This place...”

In the distance, he saw a place that looked like a stable filled with Phantom Steeds. Next to it, the Death Knights were sparring with each other.

Across the large space, there was a tower rising high into the sky, but the light was off as if the owner wasn't back yet. There was a shack near the door with a candle lit inside.

Weeeeng.

“Where are you going, Dolae-jeeng!”

The door to the hut opened and Dolsae popped out. Bibi was chasing after him but stopped when she saw Woojin.

“Uh?”

Bibi blinked her round eyes as she looked at Woojin.

“Ooh-ahhk. Master has entered the Summon Room!”

Bibi let out a yell of surprise. The Skeletons and the Death Knights who had been training all turned their gazes towards the doorway.

Chapter 106

Duty (1)

“Master died!”

The Death Knights stirred at Bibi's words.

[The death of our monarch means the death of us.]

[The witch is spouting bullshit.]

Bibi titled her head in confusion at their words, then she looked at Woojin. Woojin laughed as he approached Bibi, giving her a light tap on the head with his knuckles.

“Give me a tour.”

“Aikoo. Hmm. How did you get in here?”

Bibi grumbled as she moved in quick, short steps with Woojin in tow.

“From here to there is my land. Hehe. Isn't my hut pretty?”

Woojin looked across the fence to see the land beyond it. The garden was full of weird plants from the Demon World and there was a cozy hut built there. The place was decorated with cute items, and Bibi proudly showed off each of them.

“Ehem. Wait here.”

Bibi waved her hand through empty air, and a picnic table appeared in the yard. Then bread and meat formed on top of it.

“Mmm? How'd you do that?”

“I just did it?”

It seemed Bibi was used to doing this.

"I can decorate the place more to my liking as Master gets stronger. He he he. Please work a little bit harder."

The Summon room was a space of nothingness. It allowed each occupant to change the room to their preferences. He looked at the tower without an owner in the distance. It must be Jaenis' tower. Was the mountain in the distance occupied by Ryong Ryong?

The large open space was strewn about with Skeletons. The Skeletons were training with the Death Knights. It was a very ungainly sight.

His Death Knights had very distinct personalities. There were buildings sparsely located in the surroundings like the smithy and a pub. There was also a stable for the Phantom Steed. Various buildings were lining the place.

[Lord. Would you like to prove yourself as a Warrior against me?]

It seemed the Death Knights were bored of fighting each other. Several of them came to challenge Woojin to a sparring match.

"We can do that later. Follow me for now."

Woojin led the Familiars out of the Summon Room.

[When did a door form here?]

[In the past, it used to be an altar.]

Each of them commented on the door as they passed through it to reach the Dimensional Domain.

<Death Knight Kiba has visited Alandal.>

<He is friendly. You can register him as an Immigrant.>

<Succubus Bibi has visited Alandal... >

Every time his Familiars stepped onto the land, an announcement was heard. Woojin smiled. It was as he thought. He was able to register his Familiars as immigrants, and it was possible to use them as a fighting force here.

'I guess I don't really need to use the Energy.'

He couldn't do anything about the monsters respawning after every visitor, but he would be able to defend his Dimensional Domain with just his Familiars.

Of course, he had to prepare for when his Familiars were summoned to earth. He created a substantial amount of defenders for the Domain.

Woojin registered all of them as immigrants.

Moreover, he made Bibi and Kiba the vassals of his Domain.

At the Lord Level, there was only two positions one could fill as vassals.

There was the commander in charge of the defense, and the butler that was in charge of what goes on inside the castle.

"Heheh. Do I have to wear clothes befitting a butler?"

Bibi was surrounded by black smoke, after which she was changed into a black maid outfit with white frills. She looked adorable but it wasn't a suitable attire.

"That isn't the uniform for a butler."

"Master doesn't like this kind of stuff?"

"Stop trying to mess with me. You will protect this place from now on."

"Yah-ho! I can decorate it however I want?"

"Well, do it in moderation."

"Heh heh. This is going to be fun."

Bibi would take care of everything within the framework of authority given as the butler. When Kiba was named the commander in charge of defense, the 10 Wyvern were assigned to him.

This was a big reason why he had made them his vassals.

Woojin set it so the butler had the authority to use 10,000 Energy. The commander of the defense would be able to use 30,000 Energy.

“If you guys are in trouble, then use it.”

[The monarch's orders are like our life!]

Bibi pouted.

“Pi. You are already dead... Master. Do you think I could use a little bit of the Energy to decorate the castle?”

“Well, use it in moderation. However, if you are in danger, don't skimp on using it.”

“Yah-ho.”

It seemed decoration was a hobby of hers even inside the Summon Room. Bibi felt as if she would fly away when she had become the butler of the large Dimensional Domain.

Should she make it look like her birthplace, the Demon World? Or should she make it like what she had seen on earth? Woojin left Bibi to her thoughts as he sat on the throne.

“Call me if there is something amiss.”

Since his Domain had a 30 day protection period, he was worried more about the mess in Seoul. He had eliminated the cause of the Dungeon Breaks, but the monsters were still rampaging there.

He was pretty well informed after reading the Dimensional Domain manual. This Domain was tied into Woojin's wants. When he received a challenge for a Dimensional Battle, he would be able to use the portal wherever he was to get to his Dimensional Domain.

Woojin created a portal that led to the Seoul Station's 1st Exit Dungeon.

Zzahhhng!

A portal formed in the hall, and Woojin passed through it. There was a momentary

dizziness before he appeared inside the subway station. He was at the entrance where the portal usually formed.

When Woojin walked up the stairs, the Roused from before were still gathered there waiting for him.

“W... where's president Lee-sahngho?”

Both of them went in, but only one had come out. The answer was obvious, but one of them decided to ask the question. Wasn't this guy from some mid-sized guild?

“I killed him.”

“.....”

How could he speak such words in such a blunt manner?

The gathered Roused felt a chill down their backs.

“The bastard tried to assassinate me. Do you need any more explanation than that?”

“.....”

Of course, they wanted a more detailed explanation. From their perspective, Woojin was the one persecuting the other man without any reasons. However, no one here had the courage to question him about that fact. Woojin looked at Lee-myungjin who had introduced himself as the vice president of the KH Guild.

“Did you say you are from Baek-hyung's guild family?”

“Yes. I'm the vice president, Lee-myungjin.”

“Mind if I ask you a favor?”

“Please speak.”

Lee-myungjin had heard about Kahng-woojin from president Baek-jongdo. He was told to never go against Kahng-woojin. Moreover, he had been told until his ears hurt that he should do his best to help Kahng-woojin if the occasion arose.

“Protect this place until my guys get here. Don't let anyone in.”

“Understood. However, the Dungeon Reset happened not too long ago.....”

From the outside, it had looked as if a Dungeon Reset had happened. Woojin spoke as if nothing significant had happened.

“This is my Dungeon now.”

“...?”

Woojin patted Lee-myungjin's shoulder.

“Tell Baek-hyung that I want to meet up with him sometime in the future.”

“Yes.”

Lee-myungjin's face became a shade brighter as he watched Kahng-woojin ride his summoned Phantom Steed away.

“All right. Let's quickly organize the surrounding. Let's restrict access to this place until the Alandal Guild gets here.”

No one would try to raid this Dungeon during such a chaotic situation, but one could never be too sure. This was why he put KH Guild members on strict watch around the Dungeon.

Lee-myungjin sent a brief summary of the situation through a text message.

Ddi-ring.

[Good.]

Lee-myungjin smiled at the short but meaningful reply. If he took into consideration of Baek-jongdo's personality, this was the highest of compliments. Baek-jongdo's actions were highly influenced by his mood, so Lee-myungjin felt a sense of satisfaction when he thought about the rewards he would receive.



When Woojin arrived at Sadahng, most of the monsters had been killed. The streets were filled with soldiers and weapons. The soldiers were recovering the corpses of monsters and were in the process of organizing the roads.

There were teams formed with Roused possessing Detection and Pursuit Type abilities. They were busily going around Seoul to hunt down the leftover monsters.

“A single mudfish caused this disaster.”

He shook his head at the city that had been burnt to the ground in a short amount of time. Woojin walked towards the Hammer guild’s headquarters. It was still being used by the people who took shelter there.

They were still sheltering there since it might still be dangerous to be out in the city. Moreover, the city was in the midst of getting rid of the monster corpses and recovering from damage.

Woojin was trying to find his family in the crowd when an employee from the Titan guild came to find him. Then he guided Woojin to the upper floors occupied by the Titan guild.

“Your family is over this way.”

It was a guest reception room located on the higher floors. When Woojin entered after opening the door, the first thing to greet him was a barking sound.

Kuhng kuhng!

It was the large dog Bokhwee that he had gifted Sooah. The dog had grown a lot during his absence. Woojin glared at the barking dog and Bokhwee retreated as he whined.

“You are here?”

“Yes, mother.”

Even after going through such a bedlam, his mother was giving off a air of calmness.

“After you stopped by, some people brought us to this place.”

His mother's voice didn't have any strength behind it.

"What about Sooah?"

"She's asleep."

Woojin turned the corner at the conference room's pillar and saw Sooah soundly asleep in a bed. He carefully backed out so Sooah wouldn't wake up. His mother called for him.

"Sit here for a moment."

"....."

It seemed she wasn't in a good mood today, so Woojin obediently sat across her. Lee-soogyung bit her lips several times, but her indecision didn't last long.

"Woojin."

"Yes."

"I'm proud of you."

"....."

"I thought you were dead but you came back after 5 years. Just the fact that you are alive has granted my wish."

Tears welled in Lee-soogyung's eyes. She didn't wipe away the tears that was flowing down her face and she looked at Woojin with eyes full of affection.

"You disappeared, then your father also disappeared... Seoul was in a mess."

She didn't look to be in a good mood as she talked about the great calamity from 5 years ago.

She must had reminisced about the Dungeon Shock. Moreover, she had also thought about the past years when she had struggled alone to feed the young Sooah.

"Now I have received unexpected filial affection, and I was able to get on TV because

of my son."

The media probably hounded Lee-soogyung for interviews, yet she was thankful. Her son was an amazing person. Yes, he was.

Lee-soogyung grabbed her son's hands.

"You mother doesn't need any special treatment from you."

The people who had evacuated here were crowded into a room without any amenities yet her family was in a spacious room with a bed... She didn't know what to think about this. Moreover, she was worried she was causing harm to her son.

"Don't worry about your mother. Save Seoul instead of your mother."

"....."

How could he do that?

Woojin had lasted until now because of his family.

"People are saying you are a hero."

He wasn't a hero. He was a predator that ate carnivores.

Why was his mother acting like this today?

"Did you see the news?"

"....."

He pretty much had a reporter within his reach everywhere he went. He wanted the people of the world to see him. He wanted to arouse the people's attention.

If they were afraid, Woojin wanted it to be like that. If they were defiant against him, Woojin again wanted it to be like that. It would separate his allies from his enemies.

However, what would his mother have felt when she saw her son commit indiscriminate slaughter?

He saw worry, sympathy, anxiety, and the uncertainty in her eyes. She was trying to suppress those feelings. She wanted to tell him to just drop everything. He could feel her hold herself back.

Woojin grinned as he grabbed both of Lee-soogyung's hands and shook it.

"Don't worry about me."

Lee-soogyung's chest hurt more as she saw her son's laughing figure.

It was said that heroes were given by the heavens. Why did her son have to walk such an arduous road? She wanted to argue, and she wanted to wish for everything to return to normal.

Since she couldn't do that, her heart was breaking.

The only thing she could do was to silently cheer for him. The only way she could help him was to make sure his family didn't become a burden to him.

Her son had grown too much to envelop him in her bosom.

He had become so big that he was able to take the world under his arms to protect it.

"I'm all right."

"Ok. Ok."

Lee-soogyung laughed as she tried to hide her tears.

"You should go. You are busy."

"Yes."

Woojin stood up gave her a hug. Then, he exited towards the reception room.

Chal-kahk.

He stood outside the closed door as the sound of his mother crying tickled his ears.

I'm sorry, mother.

The destruction of earth has already started.

Neither a hero nor a god could stop this..... A calamity that would make the Dungeon Shock look cute was coming.

Chapter 107

Duty (2)

President's room of Hammer Guild.

Four people were looking at each other as they sat.

It was Hammer Guild's president Park-sahngoh and vice president Park-jinwoo. These two Rank A Roused represented Korea. Hong-sungoo and Jung-minchan was sitting in front of them.

One was a former employee turned vice president of the Alandal Guild. The other man was an inconsequential Roused they hadn't paid much attention to, yet he had already become a Rank A Roused. Park-sahngoh felt restless as he looked at Hong-sungoo.

'What a waste.'

If he had been able to absorb them all into the Hammer guild then he would have 3 Rank A Roused and an AA Rank Roused on top of that. No, it was a misnomer to call him a Rank AA any more.

The awkward silence settled around the office until the intercom rang.

When Park-sahngoh pressed the button, the secretary's voice flowed out.

[Mr. Kahng-woojin has gotten on the elevator. He'll be arriving soon.]

"Understood."

Park-sahngoh lifted his finger off the intercom button, then looked at Minchan.

"Does Mr. Kahng-woojin know something about this situation?"

Jung-minchan let Park-sahngoh's gaze flow off of him.

"I'm not sure. You should ask him when he gets here."

How would Minchan know? There was just the story Woojin said was true. Woojin also warned him once that the world's laws and morality would fall. He wondered if the current Dungeon Breaks were a precursor to those events.

Geeeek.

The sound of the door was unusually loud inside the quiet office as Woojin appeared.

"What's going on? Why's everyone acting so downcast?"

At Woojin's words, Sunggoo was the very first one to stand up.

"Hyung-nim!"

Minchan looked at Woojin with an expression filled with respect. Park-sahngoh and Park-jinwoo half-heartedly got up. Park-sahngoh approached Woojin as he put up his hand to shake.

"It seems I have to greet you in these uncertain times."

"I guess so."

Woojin naturally spoke in an informal form of speech, and Park-sahngoh's face immediately hardened. However, Park-jinwoo still extended his hand.

"It's good to meet you. I'm Park-jinwoo."

"I'm Kahng-woojin."

Woojin sat in the empty seat after exchanging handshakes.

"Why don't we all sit?"

Woojin sat down very comfortably as if this was his office. It made Park-sahngoh's temper boil, but he tried very hard to control his expression.

"You have something to say to me?"

At Woojin's direct question, Park-sahngoh put away his personal feelings and brought up the main subject. This wasn't a good time to talk about proper decorum a Korean

person should have, and Woojin wasn't someone who would be receptive to such a speech.

"Do you know the cause behind this event?"

"Lee-sahngho caused the Breaks. Lee-sahngho became the vassal of Trahnet's commander Iello. When Lee-sahngho became his vassal, he was able to cause the Dungeon Breaks."

".....?"

The person who asked the question, Park-sahngoh, and the other people in the room couldn't find any words to answer Woojin. They just sat there blinking their eyes. They thought he would have a vague idea on what was going on, but he knew it in such detail?

"Who's this Trahnet's Iello? No, what is this Trahnet?"

"They are the masters who own the Dungeons. He's one of the bastards trying to make earth their hunting ground."

This was too fantastic of a story so Park-sahngoh swallowed his saliva.

"H... how do you know this so well?"

Woojin took a peek at Park-sahngoh.

"Is your occupation being a reporter?"

"...I'm the Hammer Guild's master."

"I'm joking. it's a joke."

Woojin smirked as he answered the question.

"I came back after I went to a world where those bastards usurped the place."

"....."

They couldn't comprehend or understand the words he spoke. It was too unbelievable.

"If the origin of the problem is Lee-sahngcho, don't we need to catch him?"

"I already killed him."

"Huhk."

Woojin looked at the surprised faces as he reclined his shoulders backwards. His body sank into the sofa.

"Is this how you treat guests here? Don't you have any coffee?"

Why was he looking for coffee in a time like this..... Park-sahngcho calmed his surging temper, then paged his secretary to bring some coffee.

He looked over Kahng-woojin with shaking eyes.

'I could never make head or tail of him, but... '

Up to what point could he trust this story? Moreover, where should he start his preparations...? He secretly glanced at Jung-minchan and Hong-sunggoo. They looked surprised, but the vibe he got was that they seemed to trust everything Woojin said.

Since Woojin knew the cause of the current situation, he should have a plan to combat it.

"What do you planning on doing from now on?"

Woojin smirked as he drank the coffee brought to him by the secretary.

"What am I going to do? The same thing."

He still didn't have a good idea on what he had to do. He wasn't sure if Trahnet's lords would come in droves soon or if they would take some more time.

However, he was sure about one thing.

The war was imminent.

"I'll stop the Dungeons, grow the Roused, and cultivate my power... I'll be getting ready for a war."

The Roused had been growing under the guise of the Dungeon Business. It was evident as each country of earth had several dozen to several hundred established Guilds.

Earth was getting incrementally stronger.

They had gotten stronger under the goal of profit under the guilds, but now he would have to gather them.

If it was the previous Woojin, they wouldn't have even listened to his opinions, but it was different now.

There was an entire world of differences between the obscure Roused Kahng-woojin and the current Kahng-woojin.

Kahng-woojin looked at Jung-minchan who had always reliably taken care of his business.

“Let's all gather in one place to start our preparation.”

“Mmmm.”

Park-sahngoh, who was listening from the side, quickly put his brain to work.

How could the Hammer Guild benefit from this situation? What could he do so he could exert his influence?

“We are planning on assembling all the Korean Guilds in a month. What do you think about doing it there?”

“Mmm. I guess I can do that.”

Park-sahngoh let out a yell of utter delight inside. This was his opportunity.

It would have been best if the Hammer Guild had Kahng-woojin within their fold. However, Kahng-woojin was too big to bring under the Hammer guild. If a plan doesn't work as intended, one always had to have a plan B in life.

His insolence pierced the sky, but it seemed Woojin was in the dark about assessing the damages of such actions.

Well, since it had turned out like this.....

'Now that events have turned out like this, we have to at least be in 2nd place.'

He gave up on the title of being the best, and he focused on what really mattered.

If his guild couldn't be the best guild in Korea, than wouldn't it be best if his Guild was the second best? Moreover, the best guild in Korea, Alandal, was the center of world's attention. He could cede the spot of number 1 to them.

"Well, I'll see you guys then."

The Korean Guilds were all gathering in one place in a month anyway. Won't they, at the very least, have to unite all the Roused in Korea? There will be some that will join a common cause, and there were those who always acted as contrarians. However, it would be enough if they could call attention to the seriousness of the danger to everyone.

It wasn't necessary for everyone to be on the same team in a war.

'Everyone has to fight for themselves.'

In the end, this was a fight for survival.

Everyone would fight for their own survival. Woojin would fight for what he wanted to protect. However, he wouldn't mind it if there were less people he had to watch over.

A prime example was Park-sahngoh.

'He's rolling his eyes at me.'

This man was still moving with profit as his main motivation. Profit was useless in the face of the desire to survive.

It would make it easier for Woojin if there were more bastards like them. Relatively speaking, he would have to worry less.

"We are leaving."

"Yes, president."

When the Alandal Family stood up, Park-sahngoh saw them out himself. The restriction hadn't been lifted so the civilians all stayed inside headquarters, which was the evacuation shelter. However, the people of Alandal left the building.

The streets were still occupied by soldiers, so the atmosphere was still troubled.

"I'll come and pick up my mother and dongsaeng when everything is cleaned up a little bit more."

"Please don't worry about them. We'll safely protect them."

They had suppressed most of the monsters, but there was a chance a monster could be hiding. It was better to stay at the Hammer Guild than to go home.

'I guess having such a large organization isn't too bad.'

He thought it wouldn't be too bad to have a lot of employees and numerous Roused under him.

Alandal only had 3 Roused, so their number was too few to divvy up the work. This wouldn't work if he wanted to protect his family and the people who were important to him while fighting the enemies.

He had lost too many precious people on Alphen because of this exact issue.

"What happened to the rest of our guild?"

"Director Kim is evacuating with the other employees. The others are here at this evacuation shelter."

They were at Alandal Guild when the incident broke out and they were lucky to have been able to escape. Sunggoo's family and the guild employees' families all evacuated to the Hammer Guild's headquarter.

"Everyone's over here?"

"As of now, we aren't able to contact the chief secretary and the secretary employees."

"Ms. Haesol is safe. She was with me until we parted not too long ago."

He had come out with her from the Dungeon. Jackson was protecting Haesol, so nothing should have happened to her. The problem was Lee-soonghoon and the secretary employees. He couldn't contact them.

Minchan took out his hand phone and verified that the network was still down. He put it back into his pocket.

“The communication network hasn't recovered yet.”

The city was severely thrashed by the Dungeon Breaks. It was standard procedure to recover the communication system, but the recovery was very slow. They had successfully stopped the Dungeon Breaks in Seoul to achieve a momentary peace, but maybe the damage was too extensive.

“Let's go to the office.”

“Yes, president.”

Just to be safe, the civilians were restricted from exiting the evacuation shelter. Since there were two people with Roused licenses in their party, the soldiers overlooked Minchan who was a civilian.

To be precise, he wasn't a civilian but a guild official.

“Chet. It's a mess.”

It was as if the chaos of the situation had been left behind. The office was a mess. The employees had fallen into panic, but they were able to quickly escape thanks to the experienced Minchan. He was someone, who had worked in the Dungeon Business since the Dungeon Shock. His bones were thick and resilient.

Woojin righted the fallen chairs as he looked around the office. As he was coming up, he noticed that his storage room had been emptied by someone.

It was hard to tell whether people or monsters did this.

“Let's move.”

“What?”

He needed a stronghold. It should be a place where he could protect people from the overflowing monsters. He needed a place where he could hold off his enemies effectively with a small force... A fort like the Hammer Guild's headquarters building.

"Look for one near the Seoul Station. Tell me when you pick a suitable building. If you can buy it, then buy it. If not, we'll just take it."

"....."

He wanted to be used to Woojin's way of thinking, but he still couldn't follow the president's train of thoughts. However, he was sure of one thing now. If Woojin said he would do something, then he would do it. It was his job to take care of business as smoothly as possible.

"I'll look into it. Actually, I'm really worried about Mr. Soonghoon and the employees of the secretary office."

"They'll be back if they are alive."

"....."

He had said such an obvious statement so Minchan couldn't think of any words to say. While Minchan was looking at Woojin with a flustered face, a chime rang from inside his pocket.

"Ah. It seems the communication system is back up."

Minchan hurriedly took out his handphone. He thought it was a call from a secretary employee, but it was an entirely different phone number.

"I... it's the Ministry of National Defense?"

"Mmmm? What do they want with me again?"

Sunggoo, who was next to Woojin, answered the question.

"Hyung-nim. You came here by riding a missile."

"Ah. That... Well, just tell them the US shot it. Just say that."

Minchan let out a light sigh, then answered the phone.

“...This is Alandal's vice president Jung-minchan.”

He spoke with a serious expression on his face. After ending the call, he looked at Woojin as he spoke.

“They already asked about it to the Pentagon. They said the distance was too far for you to have reached here.”

“That's why I rigged a couple fighter jets onto it.”

“.....”

Dolsae had made it so basically a couple fighter jets were stuck onto the missile. Woojin added his magic to increase the output of the engines, and he had come to Seoul in a brief amount of time.

“The Pentagon said you borrowed the missile and fighter jets... They confirmed you rode it here.”

Woojin frowned.

“So what?”

“You might have to go visit them once this time.”

“Where? You mean the Ministry of Defense? It isn't as if there is anything more to explain...”

“No. The Cheongwadae (Blue House) is calling for you.”

“.....”

“You really have to go visit them this time.”

Woojin shrugged his shoulder.

“I guess I will. Tell them I'll go after a week.”

It would be enough time for the files with the evidence to arrive. Minchan had barely ended the phone call when a phone rang again.

Ddi-ri-di-ri ding ding.

The sound was heard from a distance away inside the president's room.

"Uh? It's my handphone."

When he left for the Middle East, Woojin had left his handphone behind.

"I'll go bring it..."

Sunggoo quickly ran to get Woojin's handphone.

"Hyung-nim. It's Jiwon Noonah."

"....."

Woojin frowned when he thought about Do-jiwon.

He thought about the child with the clear soul turning into an evil spirit in front of him in Afghanistan.

"Hello."

When Woojin pressed the answer button, a small voice leaked out of the speaker.

[Hoo-ook. W... Woojin-ah... Help me.]

Woojin face froze into a cold mask.

"Where are you at right now?"

[I'm at...]

Chapter 108

Duty (3)

It was a hospital not too far away from the Sahdahng station.

The roads weren't fixed yet, so it was probably faster to run there than to ride a car. When Woojin opened the door to enter the hospital, the inside of the hospital was filled with people. It was so packed, there wasn't a place for his feet.

"Hmmm."

There were several times more injured people than casualties.

The elevator was pretty much paralyzed by the number of people trying to use it. He bypassed them and ascended using the emergency stairway. He walked past the corridor filled with patients, then headed towards the isolation ward.

"You can't come in here."

Woojin had suddenly entered the ward, and the nurses were surprised by his appearance. They tried to stop him.

"It's all right. I'll just go in for a brief amount of time."

"No. You might become infected."

"I'm a Roused, so I'll be fine."

Being a Roused didn't mean his body was invulnerable. She was busy, so why was he being so obstinate?

Woojin pushed forward his Roused Card. When the nurse saw it, her eyes became round.

"Kahng-woojin?"

Rank A was printed on the card, but this was merely the Rank that was registered with the Roused Association. Kahng-woojin of Korea was known to the world as a Rank AA Roused. There were those who considered his rank to be as high as Rank S.

“Still, you might get infected...”

“I'm fine.”

“.....”

Now that she knew who this person was, his words didn't sound like a tantrum anymore. The nurse was struggling with her decision when she decided to make a call. It wasn't within her power to make this decision.

“Yes, director. The Roused Kahng-woojin is here, and he wants to go into the isolation ward...”

After a long talk, the nurse ended the call and spoke to Woojin.

“We won't mind if you enter there, but you'll have to be checked when you come back out. That is a must.”

“Understood.”

“Who are you here to visit?”

“I'm looking for Do-jiwon and Do-jaemin.”

“They are in room 3. Professor Lee-soomin should be evaluating and speaking to them right now.”

Woojin opened several doors and arrived at a small corridor. He saw 4 hospital rooms. There was transparent windows that allowed one to look into the rooms. At a glance, Woojin could tell there were more people inside than the rooms could accommodate.

Woojin's appearance surprised Professor Lee-soomin and the two residents.

“Are you Mr. Kahng-woojin? I'm Lee-soomin. It is a pleasure to meet you.”

“Open the door to the 3rd room.”

Woojin gave a half-hearted handshake and pointed towards the locked door.

Instead of an isolation ward, it looked like a detention room... Lee-soomin and the doctors shook their heads from side to side.

"We can't allow you to come in contact with them. You'll have to talk to them from here. We are still identifying the symptoms of these patients."

"....."

One of the resident brought him a mic. Its purpose was to allow him to hold a conversation through the speaker installed inside the 3rd room. Woojin let out a short sigh.

"Ha."

He didn't know what they were doing. This was incarceration instead of isolation.

They weren't actually treating the patients, they were just observing the patients.

They were wasting time without making anything better.

"Open it."

"Uh-huh! It is an unknown virus. After the quarantine, we have to observe the progress of the disease."

Woojin stared intently at Lee-soomin.

"Open it."

"We aren't even sure of the route of infection yet..."

Woojin smirked. The fact that the professor was grasping at straws was laughable.

Woojin's arm wrapped around Lee-soomin's shoulders. Woojin's thick hands grabbed Lee-soomin's shoulder.

"Ooh ooh ooh."

The pain caused Lee-soomin to let out a moan. The residents let out a shout.

“Uh-huh. What are you doing!?”

“Let go of him! He's going to get injured.”

The residents didn't dare charge forward. They could only talk to Woojin in a rush of words. Woojin grabbed the doorknob with his other hand.

“If you are a doctor, you should watch this.”

Kwah-jeek.

Woojin opened the door easily, without a change in expression. He carried Lee-soomin into the room.

When the door opened, Lee-soomin used his free hand to cover his mouth with his sleeve.

“Hoo-oop.”

Woojin smirked when he saw Lee-soomin panic.

“W... Woojin-ah...”

Jiwon called for Woojin who had just entered the hospital room. Woojin greet her discreetly with his eyes, then spoke into Lee-soomin's ear.

“It isn't an airborne disease. Put down your hand before I crush your chin.”

“Huhk.”

Lee-soomin quickly lowered his hand.

At a glance, there were 14 people gathered inside the room.

“No one here is diseased.”

“H... however, the people who had direct contact with the infected...”

“Nothing will happen. You can let them out of the isolation ward.”

Woojin led everyone out to the corridor. The residents had already run away; they were nowhere in sight. Lee-soohmin couldn't do anything right now. It were as if he was stuck between the jaws of a lion. He hated the situation he was in.

Woojin grabbed the door of the 1st room.

There were 5 people moaning and they seemed to be in a critical state.

“They are poisoned by the Ghoul's corpse poison. I guess Ghouls haven't shown up on earth before, so this should be the first time you guys have seen this type of poison. You can only get it if you touch them. Don't worry about it.”

“D... don't open it.”

“You are a fucking doctor, yet you value your life so much. It is unsightly to see you shake like this from fear.”

“...A doctor's life is more precious. I have to live, so I can save numerous lives of patients...”

“Bullshit.”

Woojin put strength into the arm he had over the doctor.

“The soldiers going out to a battlefield, do they not put their own lives on the line?”

One went out to battle with one's life on mortgage.

Woojin never avoided death. Not even once. No, he always lived with death close by his side.

“I wanted to live, but it isn't as if I disliked the idea of dying.”

He didn't want to become a monster. He didn't want to become like Trahnet's commanders...

That was why he persevered as he thought about his family. He tried hard to consciously think of himself as a human.

“.....”

What bullshit was he spouting again? Lee-soomin frowned in worry.

Woojin sent his stored souls into the moaning patients, after which they were immediately healed. When the patients became relaxed, the sight made Lee-soomin's eyes open wide.

‘My god.’

All large hospitals possessed Roused with healing type abilities, while others selected highly qualified professionals. All the patients here were quarantined, because neither the current medical science or any of the Roused abilities could discern the root cause of the sick patients.

Woojin had cured them so easily that Lee-soomin was dumbfounded.

It wasn't as if he didn't know, who Kahng-woojin was.

He was a Rank AA Necromancer.

He was a Necromancer, who controlled corpses, yet he was using healing magic right now. Wasn't that a bit strange?

Woojin looked into the transparent window of room two.

“Do you know what those three have?”

“I have no idea.”

“It isn't poison or a disease. It's a curse.”

“.....”

Kahng-woojin said it with so much confidence that Lee-soomin wondered if he should believe those words or not.

However, since he was amazed by Kahng-woojin's confidence, Lee-soomin couldn't help but ask the question.

“Can you treat them?”

“It's too late to treat them. There is no way to reverse the curse now.”

“Ah!”

It basically meant that the golden time had passed.

Woojin looked at the people who were shaking like they had a chill. It seemed they had gone into a frenzy. They had to be tied to the bed. Unfortunately, Jaemin was one of them.

Jaemin's eyes were rolling back and forth. When he caught sight of Woojin from across the transparent window, tears began to fall from his eyes.

If he hadn't been cursed in the first place, he might have been able to do something. However, Jaemin already had it, so there were no cure.

“Then those people...”

“They'll shake like that for a day, then curse will activate.”

The doctor's face fell into despair at Woojin's declaration. Jiwon heard him from the back and asked with a shaking voice.

“S... so what will happen to him?”

“He'll become a servant of the Night Nobles.”

“W... what is that?”

“He'll become a monster.”

He would become a mindless servant of a vampire. He'll be a monster who only longed for blood. Jiwon crumpled to the floor as strength left her legs.

“Hoo-ooh. Jaemin-ah.....”

Jiwon sobbed her heart out. Woojin looked down at Jiwon. He couldn't comfort her right now. Woojin's arm, which had been around the doctor, was released. He grabbed

the door to the 2nd room and opened it.

Kwah-dook.

He easily broke off the door and walked into the room.

Three sets of eyes landed on Woojin. They were tied to the bed.

“Hyung.”

Jaemin's round eyes looked at Woojin.

“Do you want to live?”

“Yes... I want to live.”

Jaemin nodded vigorously with his pale face.

“You were bitten?”

“Yes. My shoulder...”

Woojin ripped open Jaemin's clothes and saw the clear bite mark on his shoulder. The mark had already turned from red to purple.

“Chet.”

“Hoo-oohk. What's going to happen to me, hyung?”

“Do you know what a bloodsucker is?”

“Yes, hyung.”

How could he not know? A vampire-like being had bitten him.

“You are going to be like that.”

“Then I'll never be able to see the light of day anymore?”

Woojin smirked.

Jaemin was looking at the situation too optimistically.

"No. You will be able to see the sun. Instead, you will die tomorrow, and only your body will live to become a bloodsucker. You will cease to exist starting from tomorrow. The being you described are the true Vampire Race. You will just become their servant, a bloodsucker. Basically, you'll be a monster."

".....Hoo-ook. Hyuuuuung."

If his body wasn't tied down, he would have run to Woojin wanting to cry. He grabbed onto Woojin's pants leg.

Woojin looked down at Jaemin with a serious face.

"Do you want to live as a vampire? As you said before, you won't be able to see the sun ever again."

"Hook. Yes. I still have a lot of things I want to do. I've only studied up until now... Please save me, hyung."

"All right. I'll save you."

The two patients who had heard Woojin's answer yelled out.

"Please save me! Please I beg of you."

"Ahjuhshi. Please save me too."

Woojin shook his head as he looked at them.

"I can't save you."

"What! Why can you save him but not us?"

"Aren't you Kahng-woojin? Can a public figure act this way?"

"Please save us too!"

Woojin didn't respond to their outcries. He silently released the binding mechanism holding down Jaemin.

“Hey, fucker! Save us too!”

“If you leave, I'll blab to everyone. I'll tell them Kahng-woojin isn't a hero. I'll tell everyone you are a fake!”

Woojin smirked as he brought Professor Lee-soomin into the room by his arm. He had been vacantly standing in the corridor. Professor Lee-soomin was brought into the 2nd room in a moment of confusion. He looked at the two patients who were struggling at death's doorstep.

“Who said I'm a hero? If you want to beg for your life, you shouldn't do it to me. You should do it to the doctor.”

Woojin patted professor Lee-soomin's shoulder, and he exited the room with Jaemin.

“W... what do you want me to do? Please tell us the method we have to use to dispel this curse.”

Lee-soohmin followed Woojin out and asked Woojin in a sincere manner. It was a problem of whether he knew how to treat it or not. Of course, he would save his patients if he knew how.

“I need to take out the heart of the vampire who bit them. If I can perform the Ceremony of Blood, Jaemin will succeed its power.”

“.....”

The method was grotesque for this unknown curse.

“I can perform the ceremony for only one person. Unfortunately, it seems all three of them were bitten by the same batard.”

“.....”

“I'm going to save my dongsaeng.”

“Hyuuuuuuung.”

Jaemin was touched by the words, 'my dongsaeng', so he started to tear up. Woojin spoke to the doctor who had fallen into a state of panic.

"They'll become bloodsuckers after one night. You'll regret it if you tie them up that loosely."

"...What... what should we do?"

"You take care of it. Either you can try to save two monsters or administer euthanasia to save countless people inside this hospital."

"....."

The professor had no words.

How could this man speak so irresponsibly?

Lee-soomin looked with pleading eyes, but Woojin looked back with indifferent eyes. Woojin didn't have any other methods. He had a choice and he made it.

If he was to tell the absolute truth, he wasn't saving Jaemin. He was just making human Do-jaemin into a vampire Do-jaemin.

"I'm not a doctor. You are. You deal with it."

Woojin put out his hand towards Jiwon who was still sitting on the floor.

"Let's go."

"Where?"

"I have to go save Jaemin."

"Thank you. Thank you, Woojin."

"If I don't find the culprit within the day, he'll die anyways."

"....."

Didn't he just say Jaemin was his dongsaeng... When he spoke about Jaemin's death in such a calm manner, Jaemin's heart sank.

Woojin exited the isolation ward with Jiwon and Jaemin. Lee-soomin flopped down to

the floor.

“What should I do...”

The room was still chaotic.

The two patients tied down on the beds were letting out swear words and curses like crazy people.

“Professor. Are you ok?”

The residents who ran away had returned to help the professor back to his feet. They had run away at the sight of danger, yet when Kahng-woojin disappeared, they immediately showed up again. He was disgusted by their behavior, but it wasn't a good time to talk about the loyalty a pupil should have towards his teacher.

“Go acquire some information on the curse of a vampire.”

Lee-soomin hadn't incarcerated these people. They had been showing symptoms of unknown cause, so he had been approaching these cases with caution.

Since they were still alive, shouldn't he do his best to save them?

“Request data from the Roused Association, and even the Roused organizations around the world.”

If he didn't know the cause, then he could plead ignorance. Now that he knew the cause, he had to do his best to find the cure. He didn't want to shame the profession of a doctor with his actions.

The hospital was his battlefield.

Chapter 109

Vampire Hunt

Inside a dark alleyway.

A man was embracing a woman wearing a miniskirt.

“Ah ah.”

m

A moan leaked out of the woman's lips, sounding as if her strength was being leached away. After a lengthy time, the man and woman separated from each other. The woman fell to the floor and the man wipe the blood from his mouth with laughter.

“Koo koo koo. Is this place a paradise?”

Humans with fresh blood were overflowing in this place.

He'd never seen a dimension with this many humans. He had already sampled the blood of 24 people today. In the past, he had to survive by drinking the blood of animals and monsters. If those bloods were like grass porridge, human blood was like a sweet cookie.

He covetted more blood, but it was time for him to move.

“Kook. I have a lot of time.”

He was the loyal vassal of Railer. His great lord was of the 7th Step and he possessed 7 Thrones. His name was Veymort, and he was Railer's best scout. He was sent to earth so he could find the most suitable dungeon his master could link to.

“I'll enjoy it slowly.”

He had a lot of time. He would look around the human world, then slowly gather information. He would have to find a place to sleep when the morning sun ascends.

As he was about to transform into a bat, his expression suddenly hardened.

"Whew. I finally found you."

Veymort slowly turned his head after hearing the sound that came from behind him.

There were two men standing there. One was a pale young teen and the other one was a well-built man with a dangerous atmosphere hanging around him. His instinctive wariness made Veymort take a step back.

"Uh-huh. Where are you going?"

"Who are you?"

"You don't really need to know."

When Woojin smiled, Veymort felt an unknown sense of threat to himself, so he quickly turned around. He jumped high into the sky to run away quickly, but the hand on his ankle pulled him backwards. He couldn't fly away.

Kwahhng!

As soon as Woojin grabbed Veymort's lower leg, he slammed the vampire to the floor. Woojin didn't stop there. He kept lifting Veymort up as he repeatedly slammed the vampire on the floor. In a flash, Veymort's face was ruined.

"Ooh-ooh-oohk."

Woojin stepped on the neck of the moaning Veymort.

"Koo-roo-rook."

As if he was having a hard time breath, Veymort let out a gurgling noise. After pressing down firmly with his foot, he called towards Jaemin who was still standing at the entrance of the alleyway.

"Come here."

"....."

He had heard a lot about it. He read numerous articles, and he had even watched the vids.

However, it was something else to confirm it with one's own eyes. The person called Kahng-woojin was amazing. The vampire who had bitten him could do nothing as Woojin dominated the vampire.

Jaemin thought Woojin was amazing, but he also felt fear within his heart.

Woojin took out a short sword from his inventory raised it towards Jaemin, who was walking stiffly toward him with a fearful expression.

“Grab it.”

When Jaemin awkwardly grabbed the shortsword, Woojin pointed below.

“Stab his heart.”

“What?”

Jaemin was surprised, but Woojin spoke with an indifferent face.

“Hurry up and stab it.”

“.....”

Jaemin's hands holding the shortsword was shaking.

“You don't want to live?”

“Ah... No, I want to.”

He wanted to live, but he was also afraid. Jaemin sniffled.

“Uh. So how do I stab...”

“Uh-whew.”

Woojin put his hand around Jaemin's hand, which was holding onto the shortsword. Then, he immediately lowered it towards Veymort's heart.

"Uh uh?"

When the tip of the sword touched the vampire's clothes, Woojin let go.

As if he was trying to catch the sword from falling, Jaemin crouched in an awkward position. Woojin spoke as he looked at Jaemin.

"Stab."

"H... hyuuuuung."

If he was going to help, he should have helped all the way...

It was like a bungee jump. He didn't have the courage, so he wanted someone to forcefully push him off the platform. He could act as if he was reluctant, but he wouldn't resist when he was pushed.

Currently, Jaemin didn't have any courage.

"You have to do it yourself."

"Hoo-ooh-oohk."

Woojin's voice was indifferent.

Tears and snot leaked out of Jaemin, and Woojin could only sigh when he saw this.

"When the sun comes up, you'll die and this bastard will also die. However, this bastard will probably be resurrected in his domain."

The vassal could be revived after receiving the master's favor. Woojin had read the Dimensional Domain Manual so he was aware of this fact.

"Choose. You can die or you can absorb this bastard to live as a vampire. It's your choice."

Woojin wasn't saving him.

He was just providing Jaemin with a choice. He could decide for himself if he wanted to live or not.

Woojin silently observed Jaemin's action.

"Hoo-oohk, hook."

Jaemin cried.

After throwing up blood, Veymort was looking up at him with a devastated expression. The vampire Veymort wasn't human. Several dozen thoughts flitted through Jaemin's head, and it made him hesitate on making a decision.

"The day is passing away."

"Hoo-oohk. Hoohk."

Jaemin wiped his tears with his sleeves.

He wanted to live. He had to live.

He didn't even have to make an excuse about his sister who was crying for him right now.

He wanted to live. If he wanted to live then he had to kill.

The light in his eyes darkened. This bastard had tried to kill him by sucking out his blood.

"Ooh-ahhhhk!"

Jaemin used his strength to stab down with the shortsword.

Too-toohk.

"Uh?"

The vampire's skin was thicker than he thought, and the short sword was having a hard time penetrating the skin. Woojin shook his head from side to side.

"Uh-whew. How can a guy be so weak? Hurry up and stab him. The sun will really rise for real soon."

"Yes, hyung."

Puh-uhk puhk, poo-oohk!

The first strike was the hardest, but once he hardened his heart, he was able to strike down with more force.

"I... I did it!"

Jaemin's happiness lasted only for a moment. Blood fountained forth from the pierced heart, and it dirtied Woojin and Jaemin' body. The scattered blood defied the law of gravity. It coalesced into grains of blood in midair; then flowed into Jaemin's mouth.

Succession of Blood.

The servant inherits the master's blood and one would wake up as a true vampire.

"Ooh-uhhhhhhhhk!"

The blood was being sucked into his mouth endlessly. Jaemin struggled as if he was about to pass out. When he drank all the blood, he crumpled to the floor.

"Ooh-oop!"

Just the thought of it made Jaemin's stomach turn, so he covered his mouth with both hands. He dry heaved several times, after which tears began to fall.

"Hoo-oohk. Hook hook."

"You are a man, so why do you keep crying?"

"Hoo-ook. Hyung..."

"What?"

"The blood... It's so delicious. Hook hook."

It was sweet and delicious. It was better than any drink he ever had before. The strange sensation and ecstasy made Jaemin cry.

It felt as if he had shed his human self. It made him very sad.

"Jeez. I thought... Let's go after we wrap this up."

Veymort's body had turned into gray light, so they didn't need to take care of it. Woojin retrieved his Warrior's Weapon, changing it into a spear. Jaemin's eyes turned round when he saw Woojin approach the woman wearing a miniskirt.

"H... hyung! What are you going to do?"

"Huh? We have to take care of her and go."

"A p... p... p... per... A person?"

"It'll be daybreak soon. Anyways, she'll turn into a mindless bloodsucking monster so we have to take care of her."

"....."

Woojin spoke so dispassionately when he talked about taking someone's life. Jaemin wondered if he really knew who this person was. He felt a sense of incompatibility.

"What? Do you want to part with your own heart? Then, you'll be able to save her."

"....."

Woojin smirked when he saw the silent Jaemin.

"Are you really valuing a life of a woman who only has 30 minutes left to her life? What if she turns into a blood sucking monster and kills a person? Don't you value that person's life?"

"That's..."

He didn't have to even ask that question. The calculation was obvious, but how could he be so calm and cold about it?

"You want to do it?"

"N... no."

"You'll have to get used it."

What did he mean?

He'll watch Woojin kill a lot of people? Or was he talking about this crazy world that had changed so much?

Poo-oohk!

Woojin pierced the heart of the fallen woman with the pale face.

Jaemin closed his eyes tightly. Woojin smiled when he saw this.

He was still soft and innocent.

Jaemin was like himself 5 years ago, who had stepped onto Alphen for the first time.

"Calm your thoughts. Slow down."

"Yes, hyung."

Well, he didn't have to be in a hurry. Jaemin will become tenacious like him or he'll continue to be soft and die. The choice was on him. If he wanted to live on, he had to own up to his own decisions.

"Go in before the sun comes up."

"Where?"

"Mmm. You can probably go there now."

Woojin looked at Jaemin's level.

<Lv 15 Vampire Do-jaemin>

Jaemin had been level 5, so he had been a civilian instead of a Roused. However, the Ceremony of Blood increased his level by 10 so he was above the 1st circle now.

He wasn't a human now. He was a Roused.

The prerequisite to enter a Dungeon was met in his case.

Jeeeeeeeeng.

Woojin opened a portal that connected to his Dimensional Domain, Alandal.

"I'll send word ahead. Go in and find Bibi."

"...Yes, hyung."

"Go pull yourself together. I'll be there soon."

"Yes, hyung. I'm sorry."

Jaemin was embarrassed.

He knew Woojin hadn't done anything wrong. He just felt a fear at an instinctual level.

Wasn't this all done to save him? Woojin saved his inconsequential life. Jaemin wouldn't judge Woojin's morals.

Woojin smirked as he pushed Jaemin in the back.

"Just go in. You'll burn to death if you see sunlight."

"Heek. Yes."

When Jaemin passed through the portal, Woojin closed it immediately. The bright sunlight washed over Woojin after couple minutes. He let out a bitter laugh.



Daegoo's Dungeon Break happened contrary to the existing rules regarding Dungeons. When the Seoul's consecutive Dungeon Breaks occurred not too long afterwards, the world fell into a state of shock.

The existing rule of a Dungeon Break happening after 30 days of a failed clear was debunked.

It wasn't a problem that worried only Korea. Any country in possession of Dungeons

were on a state of high alert and were busy coming up with a solution.

Still, they had a great sample case they could study.

The unexpected Dungeon Breaks had devastated Seoul.

If the world was shocked, Seoul was in a state of panic.

A widespread exodus occurred.

No one wanted to live next to a Dungeon that might Break at any time.

Everyone was busy evacuating. The government tried to stop the chaos by saying they could suppress a daily Dungeon Break, but not many people believed those words.

The government tried to recover the public support that was broken, so they pressured the Alandal Guild to combat the Dungeon Break that could happen at any time.

Every media company packaged Alandal Guild Master Kahng-woojin as a hero who would help Korea pass through this turbulent times. They expected him to protect Korea.

This caused the people to focus their expectations on Kahng-woojin. However, he was nowhere to be seen as if he had gone underground. Moreover, Guild Alandal's actions were questionable.

The price of the real estate had gone to shit. While everyone was leaving Seoul, Guild Alandal bought the land around the Seoul Station, and they were getting ready to move.

After two days, Seoul's roads were repaired. After four days, a little bit of calm returned to the people. On the fourth day, the people wanted a countermeasure for the Dungeon Breaks. The citizens occupied a square and held a demonstration.

The crowd had a chance to turn violent so the government was worried about the demonstrators. The only thing that could allay the anger and uncertainty of the people was Kahng-woojin, so the government kept trying to push Kahng-woojin forward.

However, when they searched Guild Alandal, he wasn't there. It seemed he was

clearing a Dungeon, so they had no way of finding him.

On the fifth day, the congress and the Cheongwadae decided to suspend the plan of Sejong relocation project. The news was leaked to the media and the size of the protests grew larger. The demonstration was turning tumultuous.

On that day, the Holy Maiden stepped onto Korean soil, arriving at the Incheon airport.

“Look over there.”

Melody got off the plane. She passed through the airport security with 7 Holy Knights guarding her.

“Wow... Jackpot.”

Her beautiful appearance had the magic of pulling the gaze of the passersby towards her.

“Isn't that Melody?”

“Hul. You know that person?”

“You know. The Holy Maiden. I think I saw her on Youtube...”

“Really?”

There were some who knew her and some who didn't. Still, she received attention from everyone. She started walking calmly, and she stopped in front of a man at the entrance, who was holding up a placard.

“It's been awhile, Minchan.”

Jung-minchan was surprised by her fluent Korean. Minchan smiled as he slowly bowed to greet her.

“You've come a long way. President is waiting for you.”

Jung-minchan had come to the airport to greet her. He guided Melody and the Holy Knights to Alandal Guild's new location.

"Please come this way. I'll hold that for you."

"It's all right."

She declined his offer with a smile on her mouth. She clutched the small bag as if something important was in it. The Immortal had asked for this 'document', and it was within this bag.

Chapter 110

Second Alandal (1)

Woojin ordered Minchan to finalize the negotiation for the real estate near the Seoul Station, then ordered a move to that location. He immediately tried to head towards his Dimensional Domain.

<The Return Portal's recharge isn't complete. Would you like to recharge it using Energy?>

“What the heck.”

Woojin had no choice but to hitch a ride to the Seoul Station. It wasn't far away, so he didn't feel the need to waste his Energy.

“You are here, president?”

The Alandal's Guild employees had already been dispatched to the 1st Exit and were guarding the entrance. They had followed Woojin's instruction. They hadn't taken any appointments and had sealed up the exit. There was only a single door where only Woojin could go in and out.

“Work hard.”

“Yes, president.”

The founding member of Alandal knew Woojin from before, but the new employees only knew him as the world famous Kahng-woojin. The president was a high rank Roused who was up on the high perch above them.

<You've entered the Seoul Station's 1st Exit.>

<This is the Dimensional Domain's Restored Dungeon.>

<You can either choose Hunting or Domain Return.>

“What? I can hunt in my own Dungeon?”

Woojin laughed at this nonsensical situation. If he was short on levels, he could hunt down the monsters respawned through his Domain's Energy. However, it was wasteful so he didn't particularly feel like doing that.

When he picked Domain Return, a red portal formed in front of his eyes.

Zeeeeng.

When Woojin passed through the portal, he was in front of the lord's castle.

“Master!”

“Anything unusual?”

As soon as Woojin appeared, she hugged him. Woojin stroked Bibi's head.

“Heh heh. There were some drifters, but the Wyverns hunted them down. The Wyverns ate them, so I just let it be.”

“Huh?”

Woojin sat on his throne to answer his own question. At a glance, the status of his land came into view. Creatures that looked like wild buffaloes were roaming around various locations inside the Domain. There weren't a lot of them. There were only 20 of them.

“Does this happen often?”

“Yes. Ten of them showed up one time. There are times when two or three of them show up.”

“Hmmm. Is that so? Where's Jaemin?”

“Ah, the noob vampire?”

“Yes.”

“It seemed he was a bit afraid, so I gifted him a house.”

“You did well.”

“Heh heh.”

When Woojin stroked Bibi's head, Bibi smiled with a proud expression on her face.

When he exited the hall with the Throne, a well maintained garden appeared.

“Huh?”

When he had left, this place had been an open lot. Now there were several landscaping trees and colorful flowers that filled most of the space. Woojin was startled.

“Heh heh. It's pretty.”

“.....”

He had left her in charge of the castle maintenance and she had changed the garden into a flower field.

“You don't like it? Should I change it?”

“No. It's not too bad. Where's the house you gave to Jaemin?”

“Heh heh. Follow me this way.”

Bibi started running with her short stride. Woojin slowly followed after her and looked around to see the lord's castle, which had changed a lot.

The building where the throne and hall was had high walls around it now. Moreover, there were 3 towers added there. The inner structure was still the same, but it was decorated to Bibi's taste. It was very colorful.

“Hmmm.”

There were several new buildings inside the castle's vacant lot. Smoke was coming out from a house with a chimney. Bibi spoke proudly.

“It's a bakery. I'm practicing right now, but I'll be able to make you delicious breads soon.”

“.....”

Was it ok to waste Energy on such things?

Woojin looked at the building next to the bakery.

Ggahng, ggahng, gghang!

At a glance, it looked like a smithy and Ramson was occupying that place.

“Eh-hyoh. Mr. Ramson asked for it, so I built him one.”

As if Bibi didn't like the loud sound of the hammer strikes, she shook her head from side to side. There were several more buildings and he could see numerous Death Knights in them.

Like Ramson, some Death Knights had unique occupations before they were reborn. The large Dimensional Domain was less restrictive than the Summon Room. The possibility of what the Death Knights could do was numerous.

There were some knights in the smithy like Ramson, but most of them were gathered in a fairly large building.

“What's that over there?”

“It's a pub.”

“They are able to drink alcohol?”

“The alcohol is made from magic. However, we used up all the Energy, so we couldn't buy any.”

“...so what are they all doing over there?”

“They are playing cards. It's very boring.”

“Hmmm.”

Woojin realized his Familiars normally lived with each other in the Summon Room, maintaining a semblance of society. The fact that they had lived like that was quite

interesting to Woojin. No, his Familiars had practically lived in their summoned state on Alphen. Summoned Room was a place where they waited as they recovered from their destruction.

“That's the vampire's house.”

“All right. You can return now.”

“Heh heh. All right. Please recharge the Energy I can use, Master.”

“...I'll do it later.”

Bibi had already used up the 10,000 Energy he had assigned to her authority as the Butler. She had used it all in the span of a day. If he gave her any more, she would use all the Dimensional Domain's Energy.

“Heh heh. I'll buy that one and this one...”

Bibi was moving further away as she mumbled to herself. She opened the door to a simple two story hut.

Geeeeek.

It seemed the door needed some more oil. The loud squeal rang out instead of a doorbell, and Woojin could see the interior of the house. The large house had a kitchen with only a single dining table and stool inside.

Jaemin was nowhere to be seen, so Woojin ascended the stairway.

The second floor had a small bed and an end table. Jaemin was curled up on top of the bed.

“Jaemin?”

“...Hyuuuhng.”

Jaemin raised his head at Woojin's call. Jaemin's face was pale as it could be.

“Hoo-oohk. Hook.”

“What... what's wrong?”

“Blood... I want to drink blood.”

When Jaemin saw Woojin, his instinctual craving grew. Woojin's tanned skin and his muscular neckline looked very tasty. His canines had grown sharp and it felt as if he could bite through anything.

“Hah-ahk, hahk.”

“You can't hold it back?”

“This place...”

Even Woojin had never been a vampire. He couldn't 100% understand what Jaemin was going through, but Woojin could tell Jaemin was in pain by his face.

“...It's all bones here. They are all skeletons...”

“This is quite serious.”

He was half out of his mind as he mumbled. Jaemin's gaze fixed onto Woojin's neck. His eyes had already turned to red, and he didn't look like a human.

“Eh-whew.”

Woojin took out a short sword, and he approached Jaemin.

When he saw the sharp sword, Jaemin's will to live overpowered his craving for blood. His eyes were shaking with fear. He started to back away when he pitifully called out towards Woojin.

“Hy... hyung?”

“Open your mouth.”

“What?”

Chwahhk.

Woojin slashed across his palm. He pulled back Jaemin's hair, and he wetted the back of Jaemin's throat.

"Ah, ah, ah!"

Jaemin let out a sluggish sigh, and he desperately drank Woojin's blood, which was dripping down. He looked like a man who had suddenly found water after wandering the desert for a week.

Jaemin's tongue moved busily as he drank the falling blood. The red light slowly seeped away from his pupils, turning back to black. Jaemin's eyes misted up and tears started to fall down.

"Hoo-oohk, hook..."

"....."

Woojin healed the wound on his hand as he looked at Jaemin who cried with his head buried inside his blanket. Woojin quickly recovered after he used a soul.

Jaemin sobbed. There was a smudge of blood around his lips and he cried piteously. Woojin just silently looked down at Jaemin.

"Hyung. A... am I a monster now?"

Jaemin wanted to die. No, he wanted to live.

His fickle heart kept changing back and forth dozens of time each moment.

Even he was disgusted by his own reflection.

Woojin felt sorry for Jaemin, who was crying out.

It really felt like he was seeing his old self. He had fallen into despair like this after killing for the first time.

"Hoo-oohk. Hoo-uhng..."

Tears and snot had all poured out. When Jaemin calmed down a little bit, Woojin asked a question.

"Your sister is worried about you... When do you want to go home?"

"...May I stay here for a while?"

He didn't have any confidence.

He didn't have the confidence to see his sister. He didn't have the courage to return home, since he had become a monster.

"You do as you like. I'll speak to your sister."

"...Thank you, hyung."

"All right. You should rest. If you need anything, contact me through Bibi."

After tabbing Bibi as the Butler, Woojin could speak with her on any given moment.

"Then you should rest a little bit."

"Yes, hyung."

Jaemin looked like he needed some more time. Woojin left Jaemin and exited the house.

"Hoo-ooh."

He somehow felt a little bit depressed, but that feeling didn't last long.

Woojin tried to gather information about his Domain, so he brought up the Domain Window. It was similar to his Stat Window. The mini-map of the Domain had the locations marked where the Domain's forces, and residents were located at.

The Wyvern's nest was located on top of the pointy mountain, and at a location far from the lord's castle, he saw Kiba all by himself.

"What is he doing there by himself?"

Woojin let his will flow out and called for a Wyvern.

Kyahhhhk!

After a brief moment, the large Wyvern appeared with a loud screech.

Hooohng, hoooohng.

Its fierce wing beats caused a dust storm as it landed.

It looked quite small compared to Yong Yong, but Yong Young was abnormally large. The Wyvern's body was as large as a fighter jet.

“Let's see.”

Woojin opened the Dimensional Store and bought a saddle used by the Wyvern Riders. After attaching it to the Wyvern's back, Woojin got on.

“Let's look around the Domain once.”

He could see the mini-map through the Status Window, and he could view each corner of his Domain when he was on his Throne. However, it felt different seeing it for himself.

Hoooooooohng, hoohng.

After several beats of the wing, they were already in the air. The Wyvern climbed the sky and flew towards Kiba.

Shwahhhhh.

The Wyvern sliced through the sky in a much more stable and safe manner compared to Yong Yong. The Wyvern quickly passed by the dry plains. Occasionally, there were thin and twisted trees. He also saw patches of green grass growing from time to time.

Then he saw the large Death Knight Kiba detachedly standing there in the wasteland.

When Woojin landed and walked next to him, Kiba got on one knee towards Woojin.

[My king.]

“What are you doing here by yourself?”

[.....]

Kiba wordlessly stood up, and he went back to standing like before. Woojin stood side-by-side with Kiba.

[What exists across there?]

“Hmmm. I have no idea...”

Woojin tilted his head in confusion as he looked at his borders. There were some fog stretched out, but he couldn't tell what was across there. The mini-map indicated this was the end of this place.

[I'm curious about it.]

“Was this why you were here? Did you find something out?”

[The wild buffaloes wandered in from across there, and they invaded the Domain.]

Kiba immediately killed the buffaloes that had come out of the fog. As the Domain's Defense Commander, he considered them to be invaders.

Afterwards, he had killed 8 more buffaloes which had shown up. However, when the Wyverns started eating the buffaloes that appeared, Kiba left them alone.

The buffaloes that had wandered into this land was the ones currently wandering around the Domain.

“I'm surprised. You overlooked those mere cows.”

Kiba had been the great king of the Orcs. He had spent his whole life pillaging and going to war. He had also devoted his life to protecting his tribes, so he was more attached to protecting one's territory.

[This place is your majesty's 2nd Alandal.]

“.....”

[It isn't your majesty's fault.]

Woojin became silent at Kiba's words. A bitter laugh passed by his face. Woojin recalled his past.

The land of the dead, Alandal.

He was the ruler of that place. He was Alandal's monarch.

[I serve you in my death, but now your majesty looks over those who are still alive.]

Kiba respectfully got on his knees.

“...Can I really do it?”

He had already tasted defeat once.

The king had been the only one alive in Alandal. It had turned into the land of the dead.

The people filled with pain... He could still recall the eyes that looked at him with resentment. The souls that had turned into evil spirits also...

[.....]

Kiba didn't have an answer.

He would follow Woojin no matter, which road he took. He wanted to walk towards a direction his master's desired.

“Hoo-ooh.”

Woojin let go of his frustrated feelings. He let out large breath, and he heard the sound of an alarm.

<Beings, who were wandering the Dimensions has stepped onto your Dimensional Domain.>

<You can use your force to drive them out, or you can coax them into being Immigrants.>

“Let's go check it out.”

Woojin silently crouched on top of the Wyvern's back. Kiba summoned his own Phantom Wolf.

Chapter 111

Second Alandal (2)

Woojin looked at his mini-map and saw a orange colored dot not too far away from the Domain's border.

“What is it? Is it a person?”

He got close enough to see the presence of bipedal creatures. Woojin got closer and realized they weren't humans. They were one of the Beast race. There were of the Ho-in race.

Hoooong!

The Wyvern landed as it created a gust, and Kiba's Phantom Wolf appeared not too long after.

[Ggoo-roo-rook. What is your business with Alandal?]

Kiba grabbed his axe, asking in a threatening manner. One of the Ho-in with a large body stepped forward.

“Please let us meet the owner of this Domain, oh Undead Warrior.”

Woojin jumped off the Wyvern's saddle and stepped forward.

“I'm the owner here.”

“I beg of you. Let my family and I stay briefly in your Domain.”

Woojin looked over the party. They were a 8 membered Ho-in family. There were 5 males and 3 females. The man speaking from the front seemed to be the head of the family.

“All right. I'll allow it. However, I have a condition.”

Their faces brightened when Woojin assented, but their faces quickly hardened. Their shadowed faces indicated that they had gone through a lot of hardship.

“What's the condition?”

“I would like to hear your life story.”

It wasn't a difficult request.

“If that's the request, I'll agree to it a hundred times over.”

Woojin turned to look at Kiba.

“Bring them to the lord's castle.”

He left them to follow after Kiba. Woojin returned first on the Wyvern. Woojin landed on the castle's empty lot. As if she had been waiting for him, Bibi came out to greet him.

“Master. Interlopers are here in our Domain.”

Since she had the occupation of managing the lord's castle as the Butler, she was already aware of the situation.

“I know. Get ready to greet the guests.”

“Heh heh. Then you'll have to recharge some of my Energy.”

“Nevermind. I'll do it myself.”

“Hoong. Chet.”

Bibi's cheeks puffed out and she kicked at the floor. Woojin smirked as he opened the Dimensional Store. He searched for a suitable house for the family of the Ho-in Race.

<Second Story Hut.> - 300p

<Refugee Resettlement Set> - 150p

“.....”

The building was cheaper than he thought, so Woojin was lost for words. What the hell did Bibi use 10,000 Energy on?

When Woojin purchased the house, the mini-map grew larger like a 3D image Board. When Woojin chose an appropriate location, the building suddenly rose up from below.

“...This is quite fun?”

It felt like a strategy simulation game he used to play in the past. The building was built and the items were manufactured. Woojin dragged the Refugee Resettlement Set into the house, whereupon various items poured out.

There were beds, furnitures, cooking utensils, and even food ingredients..... It was enough items to live comfortably for several days.

When everything was put in place, the mini-map disappeared.

“Chet. Master now knows the joy of shopping.”

Her lips protruded by a foot. He ignored her mumbling and went to greet the family of the Ho-in race, who was entering through the open castle gate.

“You'll be staying here.”

The family of the Ho-in race looked at the house pointed out by Woojin and their eyes widened in surprise.

“You didn't have to show us such a generous treatment...”

They've wandered around various Dimensional Domains, but they've never been treated this well. They had only expected permission to be able to stay in this Domain.

“My name is Soo-soonahk. I would like to repay your kindness by giving you this.”

The man of the Ho-in race, who was named Soo-soonahk, pushed forward a small Bloodstone.

When Woojin took it, a message indicating the stone could replenish 50p of Energy popped up.

'So this is how I can raise the Dungeon Energy.'

Woojin returned the Bloodstone.

"I just want to hear the story of your adventures."

"I have no objections to that."

Soo-soonahk was touched by Woojin's kindness. His attitude indicated he would answer any question asked by Woojin.

"Let's head in first before I listen to you."

Woojin entered the hut. Soo-soonahk and his family followed after him. The sight of the comfortable house made everyone from the Ho-in race have an expression of joy. Woojin waved at the little ones from the Ho-in race.

"There is a second floor, so you can go look at it."

"...Yes."

They nodded their head as if they were embarrassed. Then, the small Ho-in children ran up the stairway. If it hadn't been for the tiger ears on their head, they would have looked like humans. They were very cute.

"Sit."

"Yes."

Soo-soonahk was overwhelmed, but he obediently sat in front of Woojin. Soo-soonahk's wife felt awkward within the house. She saw several utensils in the kitchen, so she started to make some tea.

"What are you curious about?"

"Mmmm. Everything. First, how did you get here?"

Soo-soonahk understood what Woojin was curious about, so he nodded his head. He was puzzled as to why this lord didn't act overbearing and coercive. It seemed he was a new lord who had gained his Domain not too long ago.

“How long have you had this Domain?”

“It's been a day.”

Soo-soonahk nodded his head as he started to speak.

“Before we came here, we stayed at a Domain ruled by an Orc Chieftain named Ort. With the Dimensional Battle on the horizon, he levied a severe tax. This is why we were forced to become wanderers after becoming refugees.”

Basically, they had been residents of a different Dimensional Domain.

“Did you see the buffaloes outside? Did they come from a different Dimension too?”

“Yes. The boundaries of a Domain can be moved to anywhere.”

In the future, it seemed monsters would be drifting into his Domain too.

“How many Dimensional Domains are there?”

Soo-soonahk shook his head from side to side at Woojin's question.

“They are too numerous to count.”

“All right. You talked about taxes before. Is it imposed on the residents of the Domain?”

It seemed it was a sensitive topic. Soo-soonahk's expression darkened. He even spoke in a slightly guarded tone. His voice became a little bit more stiff as if this topic was very important to him.

“The residents living in a Domain can be taxed.”

“Hmmm.”

This man had given him a Bloodstone, so he surmised the taxes were paid with Bloodstones.

So how did the residents of a Domain acquire the Bloodstones? Did they catch the monsters that naturally drifted into the Dimensional Domain? Or did they farm it somehow?

Woojin thought up several methods that might answer the question. However, it was easier to just ask.

“How are the residents of the Domain able to pay their taxes?”

“We go out and hunt. We earn it that way.”

“Ah. Is that so.”

It seemed hunting was the primary method. Still, wouldn't that mean a significantly more amount of monsters drifted into the Domain compared to the number of residents? The numbers didn't add up.

“Does the number of monsters drifting in increase as the number of residents increase?”

“What? The bigger the Dimensional Domain, the more beings would drift in, but they are all drifters.”

It seemed the size of the Domain was important. As the size of the border increases, there was more contact with other Dimensional Domains.

Still, this didn't answer his question.

“Then where do you hunt?”

“If the lord opens the Gate, the residents will go hunting. They'll gather the Bloodstones, and those Bloodstone will be given as tax.”

“.....”

Woojin's expression hardened when Soo-soonahk asked a question.

“If you became a lord yesterday, then you should have at least one Gate. Which world are you connected to?”

Soo-soonahk spoke as if this was an important issue. It was rare for him to ask a question to Woojin.

“It is a place called Earth.”

"Ah... I've heard rumors about that place. It is mainly occupied by humans... Humans are very easy prey."

"....."

Soo-soonahk was showing expressing his happiness.

It was very important as to where the Dimensional Domain's Gate was connected to. It was directly linked to the safety of the residents of the Domain.

A large Domain possessed several Gates, and one could pick and choose which hunting ground one wanted to go to. However, the small Domains only had one or two gates. So one had to be more prudent to which world the Gate would connect to.

He had heard about this place called Earth from the rumor mill. He heard it was a difficult to hunt, but most of the planet was populated by humans. It was a relatively an easy place to hunt.

"If the resettlement fee is low, it makes me want to settle here."

"Hmmmm."

Soo-soonahk's words plunged Woojin deeper into his thoughts.

'The 30 day Protection Period.'

It was the time when one's Dimensional Domain and Dungeon was protected from other Dimensional Domains.

If he earned a new Dungeon, he guessed another 30 days of protection would be given to him. No, it was almost a certainty.

"Dungeon Break..."

Woojin closed his eyes.

Why do monsters pour out?

They came out to hunt humans. Conversely, humans hunted them down.

There were a lot of ways for a Dimensional Domain to gain Energy. One could absorb the Energy after killing the adventurers, who come to hunt in the Dungeon. One could also collect a toll from the residents of the Domain to allow them to hunt. The resulting gain was collected through taxes. This was the general idea.

One could also go to war with a different Dimensional Domain, but this method carried huge risks.

“I won't open the Gate.”

“What?”

If he wasn't going to open the Gate, then how was he going to gather the taxes? When the Domain's Energy decreases, it meant the forces the lord could dispatch also decreased. There would be a restriction on what the lord could do, and in the end, another lord would take away the Domain.

“Earth is my home planet.”

“Aigo. This... I'm sorry.”

Soo-soonahk was so surprised that he got up from his chair, then put his head to the floor.

Race held no significance in the Dimensional Domains. Humans hunted humans. Even Elves and Orcs, who were known to hate each other, made alliances.

However, one's home planet always held a special significance to everyone. Soo-soonahk made a mistake with his words. Even he, who was an Inter-dimensional refugee, missed his home planet.

“Well, it's all right. Go rest up.”

“Yes.”

“Then I'll see you next time.”

When Woojin stood up, the nervous Soo-soonahk spoke.

“There is something I have to say to you, lord.”

“What is it?”

There was no benefit in pissing off the lord during his stay here. If he denied their sojourn, they'll have to leave for another location again. It would be a very dangerous journey.

Not all Dimensional Domain had a rational lord like Woojin.

“If hunting outside the Dungeon is not an option, there are other ways to replenish the Dungeon.”

The profit wasn't significant, but there was another method.

“How do I do it?”

“You can cultivate the Blood Flowers, or you can grow monsters...”

Woojin nodded his head, when he heard Soo-soonahk's story.

‘Basically, I have become a manufacturing facility.’

He understood it now.

He could focus his investment into his military facilities to increase his fighting power. Then he could either hunt or pillage for the Bloodstones. Or he could invest in manufacturing facilities to produce the Bloodstones.

Depending on the inclination of the lord, the direction of the Domain's development changed.

Of course, if he invested a lot into his military forces, he would be able to make quick profits, and he'll be able to progress quickly. The latter choice would just make a Domain be ripe for the picking unless the Domain had enough defensive forces.

‘I'll have to conduct further research.’

He had to find the right balance between growth and stability. Furthermore, he had to decide what was important to him as the master of the Domain. The lord's tendency changed the direction of the growth.

Woojin asked another question before he left the house.

"Since you carry around bloodstones, can you use it at the Store?"

Soo-soonahk answered as if the answer was obvious.

"Of course. If you have a shop at the lord's castle, we can buy the items with our Bloodstones."

"Mmm. You misunderstood me. I meant the Dimensional Store."

Soo-soonahk became surprised, and he vehemently shook his head from side to side.

"It is only possible for the lord to use it."

Woojin nodded his head.

He had wondered why it was possible for him to build a grocery store and butcher store. It existed for the residents and the travelers. These services would become the main source of income for the Domain especially if it was taxed.

'I have a lot of things to do.'

He had a tight schedule if he wanted run the Dimensional Domain properly.

The 30 day Protection Period that was given to him didn't feel like a long enough time. If he didn't prepare properly, he'll lose his Domain to a different lord.

Woojin exited Soo-soonahk's borrowed house and headed towards the castle where his throne was located at.

Chapter 112

Hearing (1)

Woojin sat on the throne surveying the buildings he was able to build.

He would be able to build farms and mines as a means to gather Bloodstones. There were also grocery stores, restaurants, and cafe for the residents of the Domain... There were several dozen commercial shops one could build. There were also guard towers, observation posts, and even military facilities where one could train one's forces. There were a lot of variety of buildings.

"I thought one's forces had to be bought through Energy?"

<Barracks - Military Facility> - 1,000p

One can gather the troops one wants and train them.

After building the barracks, he just had to assign a trainer to drill the soldiers. Then, he would have to send out a recruitment notice to all the Dimension to gather members to train.

The military facilities didn't only train soldiers. There were facilities intended to train monsters and other races. For example, there was the Wolf Training Center, and Elf Archery Firing Range. Moreover...

"Huh huh. They even have this."

<Wyvern's Nest - Military Facility> - 3,000p

Wyvern lays eggs and rears the young.

Growth : 90 days, Number : 1

The price of purchasing a Wyvern was 300, and this option was 10 times that price. However, it had an advantage of adding one Wyvern every 90 days without expending any additional Energy.

"Uh? Now that I think about it....."

Woojin opened the Domain Management Window to check the buildings he currently possessed. The castle had several buildings that was built by Bibi, but one of the figures drew his eyes.

Wyvern's Nest (12)

"Huh. I earned those for free."

The name of the Dimensional Domain was originally Wyvern's Nest. This place was their habitat and their roost. When this Domain was transferred to Woojin, he had inherited 12 Wyvern's nest.

Since his Synchronization Probability excluded parts of the original Domain, he probably lost a couple Wyvern's nests in the process. He was quite fortunate to have twelve. He had earned it without wasting any Energy.

"So this is how I can maintain this place."

If one considered the wars to be never ending, than the Energy would be consumed very quickly. In the end, the Domain with insufficient Energy would perish. So how could several thousand Dimensional Domain be in existence if that was that case?

"Basically, one only buys troops through Energy during emergency."

Woojin immediately understood the system.

Energy couldn't be abused to buy your troops.

The amount of Energy one had was basically the amount of supplementary troop one could have.

The less Energy one had meant one's overall forces was weakened.

It was like using Internal Energy that appears in the Muhyup Novels.

"Let's buy couple of these first."

The makeup of the population depended on which military training facilities he would

build.

“It's a little bit too risky to bring in humans.”

Woojin didn't care, but he was worried about Jaemin who was curled up inside his house. He didn't have the confidence to face humans. It was the reason why he wasn't returning to earth, so he couldn't let humans loose into his Domain right now.

After mulling it over, he decided to buy the barracks, which was a basic need.

<Orc Warrior Training Facility> - 1,000p

The space within the castle wasn't that large, so he had to plan out the city to accommodate for future projects. The castle was built on top of a mountain where the peak had been flattened. There were two pointy and knife-like mountains behind his castle, and the nests were located on these mountains.

When the screen for the Domain unfolded in front of his eyes, he decided to put the training facility at the base of the mountain with the lord's castle.

The sound effect of a building being built was heard, and since it was a basic building, the build time was quite short.

“Hmmm. Which one should I choose?”

He had built a training facility, but that didn't mean troops would suddenly pour out of the facility. Woojin looked at the list of trainers, who would be in charge of the training facility. He had no choice but to expend his Energy to purchase a training instructor.

If he thought about the troops that would be trained by the instructor, he decided the initial investment was well worth it.

<Black Boulder Tribe Arak>

<Lonely Wing Tribe Ritin>

<Gray Light Wing Tribe Torooah>

“Uh?”

Woojin was familiar with Torooah's tribe name, so he picked it.

<Torooah> - 900p

Gray Light Wing Tribe's Orc Warrior.

Trainable Specialty : Orc Soldier(3 days), Orc Warrior(30 days)

Simultaneous Training Number : 10

A red portal formed in front of the Throne, after which a big bodied orc of gray coloring walked out of it. He had a thick ridge on top of his eyes and his canines were protruding out of his mouth. The imposing orc looked at the lord.

"If you want to hire me, you will have to give me 70 points of Bloodstones every week."

Woojin grinned at Torooah's strong words. The Gray Light Wing Tribe was none other than the Great Orc King Kiba's tribe. He was glad to see their name, so he had picked Torooah.

"Do you know Kiba?"

"How does a new lord like you know his most honorable name? I was one of his henchman."

They hadn't formed an employment contract, so Torooah responded in a surly manner.

Woojin called for Kiba.

'Come here for a moment.'

When Kiba received Woojin's will, Kiba's body dissolved into black smoke and formed in front of Woojin.

[You've called for me.]

"I think he's your old underling. Do you know who he is?"

[Goo-roo-rook.]

Kiba took a step toward Torooah. Kiba was dead, so he didn't have any flesh left. However, he was a head taller than Torooah. Kiba's large body was letting out a dangerous energy; it was as potent as when he was alive.

It actually might be more sharper and tyrannical than before because of the Death Energy...

[Do you know who I am?]

“A... are you really the Grand Chief Kiba?”

Torooah swallowed his saliva, eyeing the Death Knight in front of him. This caused Kiba to kick out with his leg.

Puh-uhk, kwah-jeek!

Kiba's shin impacted behind Torooah's knee, then he roughly pushed Torooah's head against the floor.

“Koo-oohk. W... why are you being like this...”

As if he didn't have to hear Torooah's answer, Kiba turned towards the throne and looked at Woojin.

[He's probably a green novice.]

“How do you know?”

[None of my underlings would dare look up at me.]

“Kook.”

Woojin let out a laugh as if he was amused by Kiba's words. It was just like Kiba to act this way. Torooah was on the floor shaking when Woojin asked him a question.

“Do you want to make a contract with me?”

“O... of course. You don't have to give me the monthly fee.”

A light shot out of the Throne to surround Torooah's body, absorbing into him to

make an emblem on his shoulder. It was a picture of a cat letting out a yawn...

<You've added trainable Classes for the enlisted! 'Orc Soldier', 'Orc Warrior'>

"I'll devote my loyalty to you."

After receiving the Emblem, Torooah respectfully bowed to Woojin. He treated Woojin like his lord. Then, he immediately went to the training facility to put out a notice to gather new recruits. If the orc vagabonds answered the recruitment notice, they'll be trained into soldiers soon.

Ten recruits could be trained simultaneously, so he'll have 10 Orc Soldiers in 3 days time.

He'll be able to have a force of 100 at the end of the 30 days Protection Period.

His initial investment was 1900 points, so there was no loss for him if he could get his hands on those troops. Unless the training facility is destroyed or Torooah is killed, the number of his troops would increase daily.

"What's this ridiculous emblem?"

Woojin used the Domain Info to find out the identity of the yawning cat.

<Alandal's Emblem>

He thought he had caught a glimpse of the flag on top of the castle walls, and it had a picture that looked like a yawning cat... He had thought Bibi planned on only decorating the place, but she had made the Domain Emblem into that...

"Eh-whew."

Woojin once again opened the Dimensional Store to look at the Emblems when his eyes bugged out.

"Why is it so expensive?"

These were simple pictures, yet the cheapest one cost 5000 points. The average price was over 10,000 points, and there were plenty that were much more expensive than that.

"Uh-whew. She spent all the Energy on this."

He had been curious as to what she had spent all her Energy on. He was sure she had used it all on choosing this Emblem. He looked through the catalog of all the listed items, and Woojin shook his head from side to side.

"It's full of luxury items."

These were luxury items that could be used to decorate the lord's castle.

The price was unimaginably high considering the effect it possessed. It was inefficient to use the points on these items. However, if he was a lord with a lot of excess points, he could see lords decorating the castle to make it look grand.

Afterwards, they would go to war to replenish the Points they spent. They'll try to plunder other Domains. Those lords probably bought the luxury items first, then think about the cost later.

"Should I make some manufacturing facilities first?"

Woojin looked at the buildings that were associated with manufacturing.

There were various constructions capable of luring monsters in. There were baits, traps, and even Trees of Temptation, which gave off a pheromone.

Depending on which monsters one wanted to lure, one had to build different buildings or constructs.

Woojin planted several Trees of Temptation around the Domain. These trees attracted the Steel Boars and the Gray Wolves. Then, he bought a pile of Blood Plants.

<Blood Plant> - 30p

Plant that grows Bloodstone.

It bears one fruit a day, and if one doesn't harvest the fruit, the fruit continues to get bigger.

If an animal eats this often, they'll form a Bloodstone in their body.

After a day + 1p

If he harvested the fruit each day, he would earn 1 P. Moreover, he had no idea how much the animals ate...

He also wasn't sure about the price of 30 P. He would be able get his money's worth from a 30 day harvest, but he wasn't patient enough to farm Blood Plants. It wasn't in his nature.

<The Blood Plants are starting to grow in the Domain.>

The announcement notified his purchase of the Blood Plants.

These purchased plants would grow in the Domain without his supervision. It grew in a random manner, so it was hard to harvest them. He could do the work himself or he could keep gatherers on staff. However, he was very short on residents in his Domain right now...

“So this is why all of them chose to go to war.”

It was better to go to war than gather Bloodstones through the manufacturing facilities. Also, there was a limit on how many Blood Plants one could buy.

<You do not have enough land to support any more Blood Plants. >

Woojin had planted 1000 Blood Plants.

He had consumed 30,000 Points, but he considered it an investment for the future. He had no regrets spending it. After 30 days, he'll get his money's worth.

Afterwards, he would basically be earning 1000 Points for free.

“Once I started spending it, I’m spending the Energy at a really fast rate.”

He had only 70,000 Points worth of Energy for his Dimensional Domain.

The Total Energy determined the Ranking. He dropped from 1,317 to the rank of 3,212. A mere 30,000 points had dropped him so much in Ranking. This meant a lot of Dimensional Domains were bunched up in Ranking.

“Well, this is terrible in its own way.”

The 72 great lords weren't the only one aiming for earth. There were lords of lower stations who possessed Dungeons. Every one of them would try to drill a Dungeon to Earth and use it as a hunting ground. Currently, earth still had its army and civilization. They would be able to suppress simultaneous Dungeon Breaks, but one of the lords would inevitably break through.

Once that hurdle was overcome, earth wouldn't be able to stop the Dungeon Breaks any more. It was a matter of time before humans became prey.

“I shouldn't have left Alphen alone...”

Wasn't earth on the same path of ruin as Alphen? Woojin regretted not killing more of Trahnet's monsters. If he could have delayed Alphen from being taken over, then the Dungeons on earth would have probably Broke at a much slower rate.

However, he couldn't regret the spilled milk.

Woojin emptied his mind, his eyes gleaming as he looked at the various buildings listed inside the Dimensional Store.

“Well, let's see. Should I plan this out for real?”

Woojin pulled up the map to his Dimensional Domain and started to plan out his city's development plan. During that time, one to two immigrants trickled in at a time as they came looking for his Domain.



Twenty days had passed.

During that time, the Dimensional Domain Alandal had gone through a complete change.

“This should be enough.”

Woojin put away the Domain's map he had been looking at, and he stood up. He had spent 20 days inside the Dungeon, but only 5 days had passed in reality.

Woojin had left to meet his family every 4th day or 1 day in real time. He also had to meet with Jiwon to give an explanation about Jaemin.

The Alandal Guild's move was going smoothly, and they were in the process of buying all the buildings near the Seoul Station.

“Didn't they say Melody arrived?”

On the 5th day, he received news that Melody had arrived with the 'document' in her possession. Woojin had been heading towards the Dungeon, when he switched his course.

“Should I make a trip to the National Assembly?”

Woojin let out a bloody laugh when he thought about finalizing his revenge.

He wished Melody would arrived at his office faster.

Chapter 113

Hearing (2)

Woojin exited the Seoul Station's 1st exit and was greeted by Soonghoon.

“You are back?”

“Yes. Where's Minchan?”

“He went to the airport to greet her.”

“I guess he'll be here soon. Let's head to our office.”

“Yes, I will guide you there.”

He had spent a brief time meeting his family and Jiwon when he wasn't at his Dimensional Domain. However, the rest of his time was focused on building his Domain. This was why Woojin had never seen the new office yet.

Woojin stopped after following Soonghoon for couple steps.

“What's going on over there?”

“The people started to gather here and...”

“Huh. Jeez.”

Woojin smirked as he looked at the stalls lined up in front of the Dungeon.

There were fish-shaped buns and oden. A variety of street food stands were lining the street.

“Who purchases all these stuff?”

“The reporters and the civilians who come to see the sights all purchase these foods. It sells since the weather is cold right now.”

“So what's tasty here?”

“We don't purchase food from such facilities.”

“Stop lying.”

“The fish-bun bread over there tastes the best.”

“Buy me a couple of them.”

“Yes, sir.”

Soonghoon was the chief secretary. He had brought 6 members to guard Woojin. It was standard to travel with these men now. One of the guards hurriedly ran to a stall and bought some fish-shaped buns.

The reporters who had been on a long stakeout started pressing the shutters on their cameras when Woojin appeared. There were even paparazzis amongst them. The funny thing was half of the reporters were foreigners.

Koreans weren't the only ones interested in Woojin's every movement. He was receiving attention from all around the world, as much attention as a Hollywood star. The level of interest made the people of Alandal a little bit uncomfortable, but Woojin didn't seem to mind it at all.

“Mmm. It's quite tasty.”

Woojin took a big bite out of the fish-shaped bun, then nodded his head.

“It's over there.”

“Huh?”

After a brief walk, Woojin stopped to look up.

“It's here?”

“Yes.”

“It's really close.”

“We followed president's order, and we got the closest...”

“You guys did well.”

They had carried out Woojin's instruction above all else. He was satisfied with how Minchan took care of business. The new office was only a 100 meter away from the 1st exit. The Dungeon Break had created a lot of vacant lots, and this 5 story building was standing by itself.

It was a bit too wide to call it a high rise building. The building was elongated to the side as if it had been a school building. Woojin also liked the sturdy wall that surrounded the site.

“What was it before?”

“It used to house military personnel.”

After the Dungeon Shock, the ruins around the Seoul Station had been left alone, and this building was located in a desolate location. The design was outdated, but it was built sturdy. It was the ideal building to fortify. It used to be a military base, so there were several additional facilities behind the walls.

“I saw the construction going on everytime I came out. So it was our office.”

“...yes.”

He was sure he had given Woojin a report on this very issue, but it seemed Woojin hadn't paid much attention do it.

“When is my mother moving?”

“It'll be done by next week.”

“All right. Let's head in.”

“Yes, sir.”

Woojin went through the door that was placed within the walls, and he walked twice the distance he had to travel coming here to get to the building. There wasn't much inside the interior of the building. They had basically cleaned and painted the building.

The furnitures and items were being stockpiled, since it had to be divided between the divisions depending on their use.

“This is the president's room.”

They walked past the secretary room and security office in front of the elevator, arriving at the spacious president's room. It wasn't much different from his previous room, since both rooms had a simple design. The only thing that changed was the fact that the conference table was a bit longer.

Woojin sat on the sofa. A female secretary employee brought him a beverage, placing it on the table. He glanced at the employee, then he asked Soonghoon a question.

“How many employees do we have?”

“We have almost 400 right now.”

This was the number of employees in the support division excluding the Roused. Of course, Alandal only had 3 Roused: Woojin, Sunggoo and Haesol.

“It's about time to conduct an interview with the Roused. Set that up soon.”

“Yes. Currently, there are an explosive number of applicants.”

Currently, the Mana on earth was constantly increasing. Of course, the number of Roused would increase. Level 1-9 were civilians. When one reached level 10, one became a Roused possessing the power of the 1st Circle.

“Where's Sunggoo at?”

“He's currently clearing a Dungeon.”

“What star?”

“It's a 6 star.”

“Ho-oh?”

Sunggoo had grown enough to be able to solo clear a 6 star Dungeon.

“What about Haesol?”

“She should be at the quarantine zone. Would you like to see it?”

“Huh? From here?”

Soonghoon smiled as he opened the blenders to the window of president's office. Woojin approached the window, and he grinned when he looked below.

“You guys made a zoo.”

A quarantine zone wasn't something very grandiose. It was just a place set aside for the Tamers, so the tamed monsters didn't cause trouble for the civilians.

The open lot had been made into a safari. He could see the saber toothed tiger Jackson, and the Knife-beak Crows. There were also several monsters he had never seen before.

‘It'll be great if she could tame a Wyvern.’

He had been right. She was someone who had a lot of growth potential, and her ability was developing at a rapid pace. He would more or less pick Roused that was exactly like Haesol.

“Would you like to see the other rooms?”

“It's all right. Just turn on the tv.”

It had been around 1 hour since Woojin started to watch the TV.

“The vice president is here.”

“Tell him to come immediately.”

“Yes, sir.”

After a brief wait, Jung-minchan, Melody, and the Holy Knights showed up.

When Melody saw Woojin, she immediately tried to get on floor, but he stopped her.

“To the Immortal, I...”

"Hey. Hey. That's enough. Just sit here."

"Yes."

When she sat down, Woojin brought up the main topic.

"Did you bring what I had asked for?"

"I have it ready here..."

The Holy Maiden pushed forward the document bag she had brought as if it was a great treasure. Woojin skimmed through the thick file, when the Holy Knight James tried to slip in his two cents.

"This data was handed over to you as a gift of friendship by the US government, and it was to strengthen ties with the Titan Guild..."

"Ah. I already know, dude."

"Yes."

James replied sullenly. He was the bridge that tied the US and the Titan guild together. They didn't consider Woojin to be the Roused of the Korean government. They viewed Woojin as a military force that was on par with a nation.

Minchan wondered what the documents contained were as he kept glancing at it from besides Woojin. He wondered what could elicit such a reaction from the Holy Maiden and the Holy Knight.

"President. What is that?"

"It's a hit list."

"Oh, a hit list... What?"

Minchan's eyes became round. Why was president being like this again?

"M... mind if I look at it?"

"Uh. You can look at it."

Minchan picked up the documents and started reading it. His eyes became round.

“This. This is...”

These were the corporate executives who had enlisted the help of terrorists in the Middle East.

“Huh.”

There were information about politicians enlisting terrorist help to engineer Dungeon Breaks for redevelopment. The politicians used it to threaten the people's livelihood and wealth.

“This is...”

Evidence and money trails were listed neatly in the document for each figure. The source of the data was from the various US intelligence agencies, so their credibility was second to none.

No, it was information gathered by a foreign government instead of the Korean government, so it was probably more accurate.

Minchan's face turned black as his face wilted.

There were several dozen pages of documents.

Almost half of them were politicians.

“A... are you planning on killing them all?”

“Of course. These bastards tried to killed me.”

This was connected to the terrorist attack on the US soil. This was why the US government had thoroughly investigated this matter.

“W... were you perhaps waiting for this?”

“Waiting for what?”

“You kept delaying going in front of the National Assembly.”

The National Assembly had sent requests for a meetup several dozen times a day. Woojin was immovable, so they had to turn down all the requests. This put the employees in a tough spot. He had wondered why Woojin wasn't going, and now he found out he had been waiting for these documents.

"Uh. Of course. It'll be easier to get rid of them all when they are gathered in one place."

"....."

Wow. It felt as if he was losing his mind.

It felt as if Minchan's hair was standing on its end.

How could this guy think so efficiently? He let out a false laugh.

Woojin's thought revolved solely around himself. He did this while ignoring the public opinions.

A Roused with Woojin's level of ability was needed for Dungeon Defense, but no one would tolerate him committing a crime.

The world wanted a hero. They didn't want a villain.

If the National Assembly was massacred... The aftermath would be horrible.

"Please reconsider."

"Why?"

What kind of answer would he need to give regarding Woojin's question? What did he have to say to change his mind?

"It'll become complicated."

"It is already complicated. I'm trying to simplify things before it gets more complicated."

"....."

It seemed Woojin had already made up his mind. What would it take to change his

mind? Minchan was thinking hard, when Holy Maiden shook her head as she looked at him.

“Are you perhaps thinking about immigrating to the US?”

Minchan ventured a guess. Unless Woojin was prepared to leave Korea, the plan he proposed wasn't feasible. No, it didn't make any sense at all.

“I'm not immigrating.”

Woojin looked at Melody as he asked her a question.

“What's Alandal?”

“It's the monarch's land.”

“Where are we right now?”

“We are at Alandal.”

“You heard her.”

“.....”

Minchan couldn't come up with words to even respond to Woojin.

Woojin smirked.

“They dared to take a shot at my life, so I need them to fuck off from my land.”

He had his Dungeon here, and he had even moved to a new office, so why would he go to the US? He just had to drive those bastards out.

Minchan's head started to spin. This was how the democracy in Korea would fall.

Minchan felt frustrated, and he spoke as if he was pleading.

“The people around you won't be able to take it. You can survive it, but we can't.”

“Huh?”

"Please have a look around your surrounding."

Woojin's gaze moved on from Minchan, who looked as if he wanted to cry. He looked at Soonghoon next, and to Woojin's surprise, Soonghoon's face had hardened. He looked to the side to observe the secretaries. They were looking at him with fear in their eyes.

"Hmmm..."

Woojin put the documents down on the table, and he leaned his body back into his chair.

"The king has to look over those that are still alive."

Kiba's words circled around inside his head.

'Maybe I've been living by myself for too long?'

He had always been surrounded only by dead beings... Woojin shook his head, then he put away the documents.

"Contact the National Assembly. I'll be going to them right now."

"Please reconsider....."

"The National Assembly won't see any blood today. Don't worry about it. Call them."

Minchan's face brightened. Woojin, who was like a bulldog general, had changed his mind..... Even the Holy Maiden had a surprised expression on her face as she checked Woojin's face. Did the Immortal really change his mind?

Something unthinkable had just happened.



"Aigo, assemblyman Choi."

"Ah-yooh, hyung-nim. Please don't call me assemblyman. You can drop the formality."

"Huh huh huh. You've held public office for a very long time, so I should act

accordingly."

"Uh-huh huh. Assemblyman Park's words are correct. Not everyone can be elected as a member of the National Assembly for the 4th time."

Lines decorated Choi-taeoh and Park-sohgook's face as they laughed heartily. Afterwards, Park-sohgook spoke in a serious manner.

"So Kahng-woojin is finally coming here?"

"Haha. Of course. Does he think he can do any better?"

"Chet. He's a young man, so he owes his country. Of course, he has to serve his country."

"Of course. He isn't taking the sacred obligation of national defense too seriously. Since we are on that topic, is the offer we are going to give sweet enough? He even turned down the offer on making his organization be on equal standing with the Ministry of National Defense. Eh-eeng."

Che-taeoh and Park-sahngho never served in the military for the purpose of national defense, since they received an exception, yet they spoke in a very serious manner.

"We have secure a collar around his neck this time."

"If he wants to continue to live in Korean, then does he have a choice? He's just using cheap tactics to raise the price of his body."

"Well, isn't assemblyman Choi currently best at interrogating people coming at a hearing??"

"Oh-huh huh. You are too much, assmblyman Park. I'll do my best to grind that bastard down."

That bastard was basically a bubble. The price on him had gone up sharply. They just had to undercut the bastard's value to bring down the price of his service.

They'll be able to decrease the burden placed on the country, and at the same time, the would strengthen the Korea's defense. Weren't they true patriots?

Choi-taeoh and Park-sohgook looked at each other as they laughed. They shared a gaze

full of meaning.

Chapter 114

Hearing (3)

Soonghoon, who was grabbing on to the steering wheel, was feeling nervous.

'I might become part of history now.'

He really thought it would happen.

If so, it would be great if he was remembered honorably...

Soonghoon glanced into his rear mirror and caught sight of Woojin looking out the window with his arms crossed.

"Are you really not going to shed any blood, president?"

"If you ask me that one more time, I'm going to flip out."

"Huhp. Understood."

If he asked the wrong question, he would just be suffering a loss, so Soonghoon closed his mouth. There was a saying, 'Go home and kick the dog.' For no apparent reason, Soonghoon got mad at the traffic.

"Uh whew. If they are going to protest, they should do it in a more organized manner."

They had been on the road from the Seoul Station to the Cheongwadae for an hour already.

"We can go slowly. There's no need to be in a hurry."

"Yes."

If he was really in a hurry, he would have flown over by riding Shing Shing.

As he was looking out the window, Woojin asked a question out of boredom.

“What are they protesting about?”

“The Dungeon Breaks from couple days ago caused a lot of damage. The people are protesting for the government to come up with a countermeasure.”

“A countermeasure?”

“Yes. They are saying the uncertainty is killing them. They want a safety measure.”

Woojin couldn't help, but laugh.

“What kind of safety measure do they want when they are living next to the Dungeons?”

How could such a thing exist? It was akin to raising both hands in a battlefield, and asking for help. If one wanted to live, one had to either run away or pick up a spear and fight. Those were the only two choices.

“If they want to be safe, they should leave Seoul instead of protesting.”

“It is easier said than done. The rich have already left. It is just a speculation, but I'm sure none of the members of congress lives in Seoul.”

“If they can't leave, then they have to fight.”

“Uh whew. They aren't Roused, so how could that be easy?”

Even if one had ability, it wasn't easy for a new Roused to kill monsters. Aside from the abilities, the people of modern society were weak.

The fact that one had a good ability didn't mean one was good at fighting.

However, everyone had the will to live, so that was why they were making such a raucous noise right now.

“.....”

Woojin's car moved at a turtle's pace, and when the car passed by the vicinity of the protesters, he looked at them with a bored face. They yelled with hostility as they repeated their words of resentment. Woojin's eyes picked up what the picket signs

said.

- Guarantee Our Rights to Live!

- Be Responsible for Seoul's Safety!

Woojin looked at the policemen blocking the protesters. When he saw the wall of men, he had a thought.

If the large monster army invades earth, who amongst them would go to the front-line to fight?

Were they being bold and brave, since they couldn't lose their lives here? The protesters were acting very tough and outspoken. How many of them would fight against the Dungeon Breaks to protect earth?

“...Take care of...”

“Yes?”

“Nothing.”

Soonghoon looked at the rear mirror, when Woojin mumbled some words. When Woojin turned away from the window, he met Soonghoon's eyes.

“Let's say I have to protect them. Do I have to protect those who doesn't have courage?”

“What?”

Soonghoon didn't get what he was talking about, so Woojin reworded his question.

“If there are those running away from the battlefield, should I have to pick up the slack for those people?”

“Mmmm. It would be a problem to leave the deserters alone.”

“Right?”

“.....”

"If they don't have the courage, then they should fight in death."

Soonghoon spoke after he secretly tried to read Woojin's face.

"Excuse me."

"Uh, what?"

"Desertion is a serious problem, but..... I think it's a big problem if we put everyone on the battlefield."

"What?"

"Well, isn't it? We can't send all the women and children out to the battlefield. There are some people we have to protect."

".....!"

Woojin's eyes widened. This reaction made Soonghoon stumble in his words.

Did he perhaps make some kind of mistake? The president seemed to be in a bit of foul mood today.

"No. I know there are women in the army, so I'm not saying I disagree with women enlisting. I still don't have a girlfriend yet, but just the thought of her going out to battle... Uh-whew. It's a nightmare. I would rather fight instead of her."

"....."

Woojin closed his eyes.

His mother, Sooah, and even Jiwon would have to go to war...

Will he be able to put swords in their hands and ask them to fight with other people?

Woojin's worry deepened, his brows furrowed. Soonghoon was getting restless.

"I'm sorry."

"About what?"

Woojin opened his eyes. Soonghoon stumbled over his words.

"My parents are also advanced in age now, so they won't be able to defend..."

"It's all right."

Woojin smirked.

Everyone didn't have courage, but he couldn't use that as an excuse.

He realized something huge.

'Alandal was also hell.'

In the end, he had killed everyone.

Those countless number of people..... Numerous number of people wanted to live, so he had pushed them onto the battlefield. Those without courage was revived as Skeletons to fight. Those still alive had been afraid of becoming the Undead.

Maybe their real enemy had been the Immortal, not Trahnet.

"Uh-whew. This road is too congested."

It was a square. They were almost at their destination, but they couldn't move forward anymore. There were too many people here. It was evidence that the people were very anxious and worried.

"So what are they trying to accomplish by complaining to the congress?"

"....."

Soonghoon wondered if he should say this or not. No, it was a truth that everyone seemed to know except the president...

"What? Why aren't you saying anything to me?"

"Mmm. Do you remember the negotiation with the government that fell apart couple days ago? It was about the Protection Guild..."

“What about it?”

“They want the government to restart the talks.”

“Those people?”

“...Yes.”

“So they basically want me to fight instead of them.”

“.....”

In a way, that was true, but...

“Let's get off here.”

“What? It's dangerous out there.”

“For me?”

“.....”

Of course, the president wasn't in danger. He was worried the people would be unnecessarily harmed.

Ddal-kahk.

“P... president.”

Woojin opened the car door and got out. Soonghoon quickly got out, following after Woojin.

The two people walked forward as they pushed through the crowd. There were so many people gathered here that he had a hard time keeping track of where Woojin was.

Woojin waded through the group of people, arriving at the front of a wall of shields being held by the police.

Chwahhh!

Woojin went past the line of people, and a water cannon was shot towards him. The stream of water caused the magical barrier to form in front of him. The police chief immediately used his radio.

“It's a Roused. Please send the Roused Response team.”

It was forbidden for the Roused to join a protest.

The fact that he was in this square was breaking the law.

Before the Roused Response team could arrive, Woojin jumped atop the police bus. It surprised the police officer, who was giving orders with a loudspeaker.

“W... what the hell! You know this is a crime.”

“Give me that.”

“What?”

Woojin snatched the loudspeaker away from the police officer.

Biiiiiiii-

The ear piercing sound drew the attention of the people towards Woojin.

[Ah ah!]

Some unknown man wearing a tracksuit was on top of a bus, and he was speaking through the loudspeaker. The man's face was strangely familiar...

“It's Kahng-woojin!”

“It's Alandal's president!”

When a person, who recognized Woojin yelled it out, the news spread like wildfire between the people. Woojin frowned as he saw the racket.

[Be Quiet!]

Wojin's words spread, whereupon silence reigned over the square. The abrupt silence

caused others, who were out of Woojin's speaking range, to also stop speaking. Soon the silence had spread across to every protester there.

The man on top of the bus looked around several times, then the sound of the loudspeaker was heard.

[We can't stop the Dungeon Breaks.]

Woojin continued to speak as he watched the people stir. He hadn't stepped forward to give a speech. He just wanted to deliver them the truth, and he wanted to give them a choice.

[If you want to run, then get out of Seoul. The Dungeon Breaks will continue to happen.]

The number of Dimensional Domains that will start to link to earth would increase, and Seoul wasn't an exception.

[We can't stop the Break, but we can stop the monsters.]

The people started to stir once again, but after looking at Woojin, they waited for him to speak.

[Those who want to fight the monsters should stay in Seoul.]

No matter how many Undeads he had in his army, he couldn't protect the entire city. Others would have to help out.

[I'll be staying behind in Seoul.]

Woojin returned the loudspeaker to the police officer.

“I... it is an honor.”

Woojin smirked at the police officer's stiff words.

Honor? What did this have to do with honor?

“Take care.”

“Y... yes sir!”

Woojin jumped off the bus. The square was packed with people, but behind the boss, there were only police moving around.

“P... president.”

Soonghoon had barely kept up with Woojin. He smooth out his rumpled suit.

“Whew. Your speech was awesome. So you finally decided to protect Seoul.”

“I did?”

Woojin grinned as he walked towards the Cheongwadae.

Didn't staying in Seoul imply he would protect the city?

Soonghoon tilted his head in puzzlement as he followed after Woojin.



Cheongwadae's Oval Office.

Kim-byungmahn's wrinkles were getting deeper by the day.

“Is the protest still going on?”

“Yes. The people's anger is quite significant.”

At the Chief Officer's answer, Kim-byungmahn closed both his eyes and laid down on the sofa.

He felt frustrated and guilt-ridden. It felt as if this was all his fault. He was too ashamed to show his face to the public.

The appearance of monsters was an irresistible calamity. At the same time, a country not being able to protect its citizen was a disaster caused by human error.

“Hoo-ooh. Has Mr. Kahng-woojin arrive there yet?”

“Not yet.”

When Kahng-woojin arrived at the National Assembly, he planned on heading over there on his helicopter.

The protesters were occupying the square, and in a way, he was the cause of the protest. If the president left the Cheongwadae, he thought it would be disrespectful to those people.

It tormented him, but he couldn't avoid it. If they wanted to curse him, he had to take it.

“Whew. Is he trying to contact us, because of the Defense pact?”

“I think so.”

“It would be great if it works out.”

The previous deal's benefits was already mind boggling, but Kahng-woojin was in a position to ask for much more. This truth was clearly felt when Kahng-woojin went to the Middle East. He was the messiah. The fact that he was Korean was an enormous blessing.

If another country stole him from Korea..... It would be a huge threat to the safety of this country, and it might lead to the government not being able to protect the people. He wouldn't have any words to say even if he was stoned.

“He's probably almost there now. I'll go ready the helicopter.”

“You do that.”

The Chief Officer had just stood up when a guard came running up to him to whisper into his ear. His eyes widened, and he spoke towards the President.

“Mr. Kahng-woojin is here at the Cheongwadae.”

“What?”

Both the President and Chief Officer was surprised, so they looked at each other.

Alandal had told them Kahng-woojin would be going to the National Assembly, so why...

“Where is he?”

“We put him in the reception room.”

“Well done. I'll see him immediately.”

“Yes.”

Kim-byungmahn put on his coat and started walking.

Korea's greatest Roused. He was single man who possessed an army.

He was the celebrated hero of the world who had eradicated terrorist organizations in the Middle East.

Kim-byungmahn felt his heart beat faster as he walked towards the reception room.



National Assembly.

It was a rare sight to see all the congress members present at this location. They were filled with annoyance and insult.

“That bastard said he was going to come, so why is he so late?”

“It isn't as if he's screwing us over for just one or two day. His arrogance is boundless!”

“What does he think the congress is? Is he looking down on our country? He isn't even paying attention to the anger of the people.”

While everyone was letting out their complaint, Park-sogook and Choi-taeoh whispered to each other.

“Did he back out?”

“Koo-hmmm. I have no idea. He's always treated the government's requests like shit.”

How many times had Alandal ignored the government's requests?

He might have said he was going to come, but there was a chance he might have changed his mind. As he was thinking this, his aide approached and spoke to him.

“Kahng-woojin is in a meeting with the president...”

Park-sogoohk's face crumpled.

“What? Why did he go there?”

Why would he go to the Cheongwadae after saying he was going to come to the National Assembly?

How dare he look down on the country and its people.

“Arrogant bitch.”

Park-sogoohk didn't hide his foul mood.

Chapter 115

Hearing (4)

Alandal's guild master Kahng-woojin and the President of Korea, Kim-byungmahn, stood in front of each other. The President raised his hand.

“I'm President Kim-byungmahn.”

“Uh? The comedian?”

“Hahaha. We have the same name.”

Woojin was being rude but Byungmahn glossed over it with an affable laughter. Woojin smirked as he shook the President's hand.

“I thought all politician were shady. You are ok.”

“Huh? If you get to know me, you'll find out I'm a pretty shady guy.”

Woojin shook his head from side to side. His soul wasn't clear like Jiwon's soul, but it was still light in color. At the very least, it meant he was very determined like Haesol.

Woojin wasn't concerned if this man was involved in scandals or not. It was more important to find out where his pure will was focused on. If he was like Haesol, who was adamant in serving her country, then it would be perfect...

“I won't tell you how bad you are. Let's sit.”

“Haha. You are exactly as I've heard. You are very straightforward.”

The President and Woojin sat on the sofa. His attitude was more rude than straightforward. The Chief Officer's expression hardened, but he didn't move an inch. If he moved even a little bit, his fists shaking in anger might be seen.

“How much have you heard?”

“What?”

“I'm sure you've investigated me.”

“.....”

Kim-byungmahn let out a laugh. His political career hadn't been short, but he had almost never held a conversation with an opponent who was so straightforward and in such a hurry.

Most of these people had been ignorant young men or people who wore their emotions on their sleeves. They were self righteous hacks who believed they were honest and telling the truth.

Woojin was different.

He had the power that gave his words much more weight.

“Which Kahng-woojin are you talking about?”

“Ho-oh. You are aware about my activities on Alphen?”

Kim-byungmahn didn't hesitate to nod his head. He sensed he would gain nothing by hiding information in this conversation.

“I know what most people know.”

South Korea had spent unimaginable efforts to find out more about Kahng-woojin. He was a Roused born in their country, yet there was no information on him. Moreover, it had reached a point where they couldn't control him easily.

Woojin smiled as he dared the other man to speak. Kim-byungmahn opened his mouth.

“You were summoned away 5 years ago, and you've returned after living 20 years on Alphen. The force you possess was earned during that time.”

“What about the other stuff?”

“We haven't really found any.....”

Woojin shrugged his shoulder, then he buried his body into the sofa. Kim-byungmahn straightened his back, and he swallowed his spit.

“Why do you think I'm here?”

“We've persistently asked your guild to become this nation's Guardian guild. Aren't you here to officially negotiate the terms of the deal?”

Woojin shook his head from side to side.

“I'm here for revenge. Moreover, I'm here to give you a warning and a proposal.”

“.....”

Woojin put the documents on the table.



They were almost at the National Assembly building. Woo-soonghoon's shrunken heart finally felt as if it was returning to normal. He took a peek at the rear mirror to look at Woojin.

“Excuse me, president.”

“Uh, what?”

“Are you really going to do it?”

“What?”

“I'm talking about the hit list.”

Woojin smirked.

“Do you want me to forgive them? Those bastards aimed for my life.”

“Didn't you make a promise with the vice president?”

Woojin didn't know about anything else, but he always kept his word. He clearly said there would be no blood shed at the National Assembly building...

“I just have to avoid shedding blood at the National Assembly.”

“.....!”

What! Doesn't it basically means he'll follow through at a later time? Soonghoon put on a serious expression.

“Hey, Soonghoon.”

“Yes, president.”

“Don't get scared.”

“.....”

Wasn't the situation getting much worse?

Soonghoon's face hardened when Woojin started looking at his surrounding. The National Assembly building had received damage during the Dungeon Shock, but it had been fixed very quickly.

Moreover, 20% of the army personnel protecting Seoul was protecting this place.

“We've arrived.”

A military unit was guarding the National Assembly building. After passing through a checkpoint, Woojin got out of the car. A man wearing a suit approached him, giving his greeting.

“I'm Lee-kahngjin.”

“I'm Kahng-woojin.”

“I suddenly received a call telling me to come here. What can I do for you?”

His face was filled with questions.

Woojin had asked the President to sent a sharp judge that was knowledgeable about the politicians. It seemed Lee-kahngjin was that person.

“Well, you should walk with me.”

First, he followed after Woojin. He was well aware of the fact that there would be a hearing conducted by the congress. So why was he needed here...

“I want some advice from you.”

“About what?”

Woojin passed the documents to him. Lee-kahngjin received the documents with confusion in his heart. As he looked over the documents, he clicked his tongue.

“Dirty bastards. Now they are playing at an international level.”

Seoul's judge Lee-kahngjin.

In the world of politics, he was rumored to be a crazy dog. There wasn't a politician he hadn't gone after. He was quite famous for his probes.

His ability for investigating evidence was so outstanding that he sent a fourth term member of the National Assembly to the slammers three years ago.

The document was filled with names he was well acquainted with. They were all on his target list of corrupt politicians.

In the materials given to him by Kahng-woojin, he read about how some people were intentionally causing Dungeon Breaks. Those vicious bastards had put the people of this country in danger. They were also indirectly responsible for the missile terrorist attack that happened in the US.

He could see the rough outline now. It was his speciality to dig into the sordid deeds of the members of congress.

Why did the President specifically call for him, and why did he send him to Kahng-woojin?

What did Kahng-woojin expect from him?

“What advice do you need?”

"I'm going to kill these 5 bastards no matter what. Aside from those five, I'm thinking about whether I want to kill any more. I need your advice."

Uh? He would have never guessed such a topic would come up.

Lee-kahngjin stopped walking, and he looked at Woojin with a dazed expression.

What was this man about?

Woojin appeared in front of the congress, with Lee-kahngjin and Woo-soonghoon following behind as his aides.

Those in their seats had faces full of discontent.

This man was the cause of this gathering. They were busy working for this country, so how could he be late in coming here? Before the moderator could speak, Choi-taeoh stood up from his seat and started yelling.

"Do you view the congress as some kind of a joke?"

Of course, they were a joke. Kahng-woojin took a glance around and went to sit on the chair placed on top of a dais. He wasn't sitting there to be on the receiving end of a confirmation hearing. This location allowed him the full view of every one of the senators.

While Woojin was in his seat, he started looking at every single one of their faces. It wasn't just the politicians. He even looked at the aides, and the reporters.....

Woojin decided which 5 people he wanted to attached a shadow.

The five he chose had a direct connection with Lee-sahngho, and they had engineered his assassination attempt. Choi-taeoh was included in this group.

"Huh. Can you not hear me? Please answer the question."

Choi-taeoh never thought anyone would dare to ignore him. His neck veins bulged as he ranted and raved. However, his words didn't even register with Woojin. He just sat there with the document folder open. He kept turning the pages as he compared the pictures to the actual faces.

There were those with an X next to their picture. Lee-kahngjin had placed marks next to the pictures.

'I don't need this bastard.'

There were a lot of trash here, but he didn't need to kill all of them. He was targeting a certain faction who was aiming for his life.

Woojin had come here for revenge. He wasn't here to clean out Korea's congress. He didn't care what trashy moves they performed, but he put more names on his hit list with the help of Lee-kahngjin. He was doing everyone a service.

"There's a lot of them."

He checked the list, and it was almost half of the congress. After looking at all their faces, Woojin stood up from his seat. He had now memorized the faces of the bastards he had to kill.

"Let's head out."

"What? You are done already?"

"I just need to see the faces of the bastards I have to kill."

Woojin was about to leave with Lee-kahngjin and Soonghoon. Choi-taeoh started to yell.

"Uh-huh. Where do you think you are going!?"

When Kahng-woojin stood up, the congress stirred. They had waited for him until now, yet he was already leaving? Hadn't he just arrived?

The aides ran towards Woojin.

"Please get back into your seat."

"Why?"

"What? Don't we have to start the confirmation hearing?"

"Ah. The hearing."

Were they trying to verify something with him? Maybe they were trying to get him to participate in the Guardian guild that he had no thoughts of doing.

Choi-taeoh's words were continuously ignored, so he sat back down into his seat as he wheezed.

'Wait and see what will happen once this starts.'

Choi-taeoh was going to air all of Woojin's dirty linens in public. There were over several dozen laws Woojin had broken in the past.

Woojin pulled the microphone that was put on top of a table placed above the dais and spoke.

He started speaking to the congress. No. Actually, he was talking towards the cameras and the reporters.

"I'm not going to do that Guardian guild or whatever, so we don't need to do a hearing. Instead, I'll let you know one thing."

Woojin's words caused the congress to stir, but he continued speaking as if he wasn't paying attention to them.

"Those who have connections to the missile terror attack that was aimed to kill me, those who purposefully caused Dungeon Breaks, and those who don't think we have to go to war with the monsters should all heed my warning."

"What bullshit are you spouting!"

"How insolent!"

Several congressmen yelled out, but Woojin easily ignored them as he continued to speak.

"The relevant information has already been sent to the media..."

"Bullshit!"

“This all bullshit! We don't even need to hear him out.”

“How dare you! Where do you think you are!”

Woojin frowned, since the commotion was loud enough to swallow his words. Well, he would stop them from talking...

Hwee-ri-reek.

Black smoke formed behind Woojin, and 53 Death Knights were summoned behind him. Eventually, Choi-taeoh started yelling.

“What do you think you are doing in the sacred confines of congress!”

It was taboo to use one's Roused ability in congress. There was a strict law regarding it.

“Mr. Kahng-woojin is in violation of the Special Roused Law Article 1 Paragraph 16. Those monsters should immediately...”

He couldn't continue his words.

“Uh. Uh uh uhk.”

His mouth wouldn't open. It felt as if some unknown power was pressing down on him. It was the work of Shadow Ggaebi, who was attached to Choi-taeoh by Woojin.

Woojin had used the low level Shadow skill called Body Domination.

Woojin once again picked up the microphone.

“Finally, some silence. I've turned over the data to the media so people will know why many of you have to die. I'll wait outside now.”

Woojin let go of the microphone and exited the conference hall. No one blocked his path. The imposing Death Knights opened a path as if they were guarding Woojin.

The congress boiled over when they exited.

“How dare he! Did you see that? Did you see?”

"How can we let such a brutal man be in charge of our nation's security? This cannot happen."

"The documents might be forged. We have to deport Kahng-woojin."

Everyone wanted their voices to be heard, so they started yelling over each other. It was a complete pandemonium.

Woojin turned the corner and arrived at his parked car. Spit flew out as Woo-soonghoon spoke excitedly.

"You did really well in holding yourself back."

Woo-soonghoon was aware of Woojin's personality, so he thought the current events was almost miraculous.

However, Lee-kahngjin was looking a little bit disappointed. He watched the news, so he was well aware of Woojin's deeds. In the Middle East, Kahng-woojin had killed the terrorists without mercy.

He had wanted him to do something big here.

'Too bad.'

The members of congress wallowed in dirty politics. Lee-kahngjin hated them so much that he wanted Woojin to do something rash.

"Well, should we begin?"

Woojin looked at the Death Knights standing in a line.

"Take the heads of the faces I've memorized."

[We will carry out your order.]

The Death Knights looked excited at Woojin's command. Woo-soonghoon was freaked out as he asked a question.

"I... I thought you said you weren't going to shed any blood in congress?"

"That's why I came out here."

"....."

He didn't think the vice president meant this with his words... He probably would have preferred it to happen within congress instead of happening in a public setting. However, it seemed Woojin didn't care.

"Al."

[Master.]

The obedient dual blade Death Knight Al Assad knelt in front of Woojin. Black cloth was wrapped around his body. He looked like someone cosplaying an assassin from ancient Persia.

"Ggaebi."

[Hoo hoo hoo. This will be another fun game.]

Ggaebi let out a wicked smile after he looked into Woojin's thoughts. Ggaebi was absorbed into Al Assad's shadow, and their abilities were combined.

"Take care of them by tonight..."

[I follow master's orders.]

There were businessmen who were put on his hit list. Al Assad's body blurred and he melted into the terrain. He won't be discovered as he performed his mission, since he would be using Ghost Steps and Shadow Cloak.

Lee-kahngjin wiped the sweat off his forehead as he looked at Woojin.

'Is he really going to do it?'

This was basically carrying out justice for the nation, so there was no room for excuse...

"It's taking them awhile to come out."

As if the act of waiting was boring him, Woojin ignited his Fire magic. Well, if they wanted to live, they'll have to come out.

"P... president?"

The worry inside Woo-soonghoon's heart was growing larger.

Wasn't this getting out of hand?

"It's all right. The President will take care of the clean up."

Lee-kahngjin tilted head in puzzlement at Woojin's words. What kind of secret deal did he make with the President.....

The fireball in Woojin's hand flew into the building.

He was going to smoke out the rabbit hole. It was time to hunt now.

Chapter 116

Alandal's State of Affair (1)

The fire alarm went off and the people started to pour out of the building. A wall of soaked people was blocking the entrance.

“Hey, get outta my way! Why are you guys standing there like dumbasses!”

The greedy Choi-taeoh's will to live was extraordinary. He pushed as people fell and was finally able to exit outside.

“All right. I'm alive.”

He didn't know if it was a small or large fire. However, wasn't it prudent to move to safety first? He couldn't just stay behind. He didn't trust the National Assembly building's fire suppression system. Choi-taeoh's suspicion and his will to live was as bloated as his stomach.

After barely getting past the group of people, the fresh air greeted him. The water from the sprinkler system had soaked his suit, so he wasn't feeling that great. There was the additional cost of dry cleaning he would have to pay. He decided he'd rather just buy a new one..... He recovered his sense of dignity, which he had lost as he was escaping the building.

“Uh-huh! What's with the sudden commotion!”

He started angrily scolding others. He wanted to know what had caused the fire alarm, but no one responded to him. Everyone was half frozen, and they were hesitatingly standing in place.

“Huh?”

The people gathered around the entrance, facing Choi-taeoh.

The two sides were looking at each other awkwardly. Actually, the group of people were looking behind Choi-taeoh. He tilted his head in confusion, and he turned his

body.

"Uh?"

There were people on the ground bleeding out. No, they were already corpses. His good friend Park-sohgook was one of corpses.

A mass murder had happened at the Korean congress. When he was confronted with this preposterous situation, Choi-taeoh neither bluster nor called out for the police.

"....."

He silently moved backwards, into the crowd.

His eyes rolled around as he observed the situation.

Kahng-woojin's Death Knights, who he had seen in the convention room, were surrounding the congress. Moreover, the Death Knights weren't the only ones there.

'It's those bastards I saw at Afghanistan.'

He had seen them through the news until he was sick and tired of them. It was Kahng-woojin's Skeleton army, which numbered around 10 thousand. It seemed Kahng-woojin could summon them anywhere, so several thousand of them were besieging the congress.

The fire alarm had caused him to escape the building, but now he was frozen in shock as he witnessed the murders that had been committed by the Skeleton monsters.

The man standing next to Choi-taeoh asked a question in a small voice.

"He's crazy. How the hell does he think he'll deal with the aftermath?"

"I know, right?"

This wasn't merely a case where a cornered stone met the chisel. He would become Korea's public enemy... No, he would be considered a supergrade criminal. This was totally different from the act of suppressing the Middle Eastern terrorists.

He had killed the current members of congress who had committed no sins.....

Fortunately, it wasn't an indiscriminate massacre.

"Are the Skeletons able to pick and choose who they kill?"

"I don't..."

The man who had been whispering his answers stopped speaking. He was frozen stiff. A Death Knight in black armor was leading a group of Skeletons towards him, coming to a stop right in front of him.

[Target confirmed.]

The Death Knight was looking straight at Choi-taeoh.

"W... what the hell?"

Choi-taeoh was so taken aback, he started stumbling backwards. The crowd was packed together like matches in a box, so he had nowhere to go.

"G... get out of the way! I'm Choi-taeoh! Move!"

Even his desperate struggle was only able to get the people to move half-heartedly. The Death Knight's rough hand grabbed Choi-taeoh's arm.

Hweeeeek. Kwah-dahng!

Choi-taeoh's body couldn't resist against its strength. He was thrown into the air and he crashed against the floor.

[Haul him to our monarch.]

Kee-kee-keek.

The Skeleton received the order from the Death Knight, who was their commander. They grabbed Choi-taeoh's limbs, and they started to move.

"L... let me go! You dirty monsters!"

Choi-taeoh struggled, but the Skeletons continued to move with him in tow as they let out a bizarre sound. They arrived at a place where Kahng-woojin and a numerous

number of corpses was waiting for him.

“Is he the 32nd one?”

The Skeletons came to a stop in front of Woojin, and they tossed Choi-taeoh to the ground. Then a Skeleton pulled back his head forcefully.

“Ooh-oohk. Let me go of me!”

He knew it was useless to yell, but he still struggled mightily. He had seen his future. He had seen the corpses scattering the ground.

Woojin searched through his memory, and he recalled this face.

“It's Choi-taeoh. Take care of him.”

[I will carry out your command.]

A Death Knight with a spear approached him. Choi-taeoh ranted and raved as he struggled.

“W... why are you doing this?”

“If you see the news, you'll find out.”

“If you are going to k... kill me, how am I going to see it!”

“Too bad.”

Choi-taeoh ranted and raved at Woojin's words.

“Do you think you are a god because you have power? At the very least, let me know the reason, you son of a bitch!”

How can he play with a person like this?

Woojin smirked at Choi-taeoh's words.

“Didn't you have a connection with Lee-sahngho? You've also made a decent profit using the Dungone Breaks. Moreover, you played a role in the missile attack that was

aimed to kill me. Those are the reasons."

Choi-taeoh's eyes opened wide. He didn't care about the reasons. He just wanted to live.

"I had nothing to do with that! I'm innocent! How can you kill an innocent man! What does the law have to say about this!"

"Those are enough reasons to kill you."

Choi-taeoh felt like throwing up blood. How can such a crazy bastard exist? This was happening in the heart of Korea. Moreover, he was conducting his grotesque murder show in front of congress.

"You crazy son of a bitch! This is South Korea. It's the Democratic Republic of Korea! It's the Republic of Korea. Do you think you'll be able to live after carrying out such acts?"

Woojin shrugged his shoulders at his desperate words.

"You should worry about yourself."

"You mother fucker..."

His words weren't registering with this guy. How could such a crazy bastard show up?

Kahng-woojin was a Rank AA Roused. Korea's guardian? Earth's hope? Role model for the Roused?

It was all bullshit. The crazy bastard in front of his eyes was a terrorist who used monsters. He dared to carry out such brutal acts in a liberal democratic country.....

[You are being disrespectful to the monarch.]

The Death Knight's spear pierced Choi-taeoh's heart.

"C... crazy..."

His voice lost too much strength for it to be called his last will. Choi-taeoh's body slumped. Woojin ripped the document related to the man. There were still several

more documents in his hands.

"They are damn late in coming out."

Woo-soonghoon had already emptied his stomach. Soonghoon and Lee-kahngjin was quietly waiting behind Woojin. Woo-soonghoon thought about a lot of things during that time.

'Whew. I would have probably died instead of being hit on the cheeks if I sold him an Omnia instead of a Galaxy.'

He recalled the terrifying first meeting he had with Woojin as a phone salesman. He was relieved.

Lee-kahngjin also had a lot of thought in his mind while all of this was going on.

'Is he crazy?'

He was someone, who hated Korean politics more than anyone else.

He knew no politicians were clean. There were some amongst them he considered to be trash. They didn't deserve to live amongst the people. However, the law of the land had protected these people.....

The only thing Lee-kahngjin could do was send them to prison for several months. It was basically sending them on a vacation to prison. The only thing it did was to damage the politician's image.

However, Kang-woojin was...

'Is he some kind of a revolutionist?'

Did a revolutionist appear? Was he going to pull out Korea's rotten roots? Was he doing this knowing he might be labeled the worst murderer in Korean history?

While Lee-kahngjin was thinking hard about Kahng-woojin's actions, the execution had come to an end.

No, this wasn't really revenge. This was closer to a warning.

“Let's go now.”

As if he was getting off from work to go to his home, Woojin lightly rose to his feet, then started walking. The haggard Woo-soonghoon and Lee-kahngjin followed after him, the former of which had no energy left to throw up again. Soonghoon carefully asked a question.

“Is this really ok, president?”

Woo-soonghoon was nervous, since the cameras were taking pictures of them from all angles. Will they really be able to live their lives and not get arrested?

“It'll be alright. Go over there and bring that camera over here.”

“Yes.”

Woo-soonghoon ran to complete his errand.

The congress was surrounded by the Death Knights and Skeletons. Moreover, there were alarmed soldiers surrounding the Skeleton army.

Amongst the soldiers, Soonghoon caught sight of cameras and reporters. As he was approaching them, several dozen guns were raised towards him. His legs were shaking.

“Don't come any closer.”

“My president has something to say. Please bring a camera over to him.”

“.....”

The commander of the unit, colonel Park, had an incredulous expression on his face.

This was too bizarre of a business to consider them to be crazy, and now they wanted a camera. Maybe they are really crazy? Shocking was the word that encapsulated Woojin's actions.

“I'll go.”

The network executive thought this was an exclusive scoop, so he ran forward. He was

willing to put his life on the line for the story. The reporter swallowed his spit and followed after the executive with the camera staff.

Woojin asked a question to the network executive, who had approached him.

“Is this live?”

“What? Yes.”

Woojin looked at the camera and made his declaration.



The President had the TV on as he watched it with the Chief Officer.

He had cancelled his trip to the congress.

‘A warning and a proposal.....’

The words spoken by Kahng-woojin wouldn't leave his thoughts.

“What do you think about this?”

“He's committing high treason against our country.”

The Chief Officer watched the unprecedented breaking news that was all over each television channel. He had spoken in a firm manner.

The President shook his head from side to side.

“No, I'm talking about his proposal.”

“...It isn't something I can decide...”

“Hmmmm...”

This wasn't actually an unprecedented event, but at the very least, it was something he would have never thought would occur on the Korean Peninsula. The division of North and South Korea was already a tragedy, and if another country was formed here.....

President Kim-byungmahn was deep within his thoughts when one of his secretaries ran quickly towards him.

“It's a call from the Minister of National Defense.”

He didn't even need to pick up the phone to know what this was about.

He had ordered the troops to surround Kahng-woojin, and he gave them explicit orders to stay put.

“Give it to me.”

Kim-byuhgmahn answered the phone, and a desperate voice was heard.

[Kahng-woojin said if we don't break up our encirclement in 5 minutes he'll attack us. Please give us the engagement order. We have to send a preemptive strike.]

Does he really think a preemptive strike would successfully take down Kahng-woojin?

Even the terrorists in the Middle East had lost to him, because they had lacked enough firepower.

What was truly best for Korea?

After thinking hard on it, Kim-byungmahn gave his answer.

“Break up the perimeter.”

[...We shouldn't do that. This is high treason against our country. We have to punish him sternly.]

“How many casualties?”

[There are 57 casualties including congressman Park-sohgook.]

Kim-byungmahn made his decision within his heart. Kahng-woojin had kept his exact promise.

“Release them from the encirclement. This is an order.”

[...Understood.]

Kim-byungmahn ended the call and spoke to his secretary.

“Prepare my official press conference.”

“Yes, sir.”

Kim-byungmahn let out a very heavy sigh.



The employees gathered inside the Alandal president's room was discreetly glancing at the vice president Jung-minchan. He was bonelessly lying on the sofa. His expression was of a person who had just lost his country.

His headache was so severe that medicine wasn't working, so he had tied his necktie around his head.

Kim-haemin comforted Jung-minchan, who was lying down with a devastated expression on his face.

“Just give up, vice president. This isn't the first time our president caused trouble.”

“Ha-ah... This isn't in the same stratosphere as an accident...”

“.....”

Haemin agreed with those words.

Kang-woojin's story was plastered all over the news.

“Oh wow. Hyung-nim is the number 1 searched topic again.”

Sunggoo let out a bright laugh as he pushed his smartphone forward. The dark circles under Minchan's eyes became deeper.

How come all the Roused in their guild was like this?

The keywords in the search ranking was full of words like Kahng-woojin, Alandal,

treason, rebellion, congress attack, and etc.

It was Jung-minchan's job to take care of the aftermath when Kahng-woojin created an accident. He held the position of vice president, but the stress and pressure he felt from this job was quite significant. His president always seemed to cause global issues now.

"Try having one more pill."

"Hah-ah. All right."

He took a relaxing pill from Kim-haemin. He put it in his mouth and took a gulp of water.

[This is breaking news. The President has started his official press conference not too long ago. The President has announced the Alandal guilds' declaration of independence. He acknowledged Alandal as its own country, and they will be given sovereignty...]

Poo-oohp!

Minchan spat out the water on the desk and the relaxing pill rolled across the floor. Everyone's attention was focused on him after he recreated a fountain show.

"The p... president is finally trying to become a king."

He mumbled as if his soul had left his body. The Holy Maiden, who was watching the TV, spoke.

"He's already is a king."

He was Alandal's monarch. To her, nothing had changed.

She thought about how many kingdoms had fallen to the Immortal's hands. It was prudent for Korea to not antagonize him.

The mere sacrifice of 57 people had saved the Republic of Korea.

Chapter 117

Alandal's State of Affair (2)

[This is a breaking news. Fifty seven Korean Politicians with ties to the missile terrorist attack in the US has been identified. The Roused Kahng-woojin has suppressed and eliminated these individuals. The fact that these politicians had intentionally caused the Dungeon Breaks, and the extent of damage caused by them was revealed. The anger of the people.....]

Jung-minchan let out a sigh as he looked at the news.

"When's the president arriving?"

"He'll be here in 30 minutes."

Seoul station wasn't too far away from the National Assembly. The news was all about the killing... They were listing all the corruption charges and wrongdoings the politicians had committed. It was exactly the information brought by Melody.

[Through the press conference, the President thanked the Alandal's guild master Kahng-woojin. As soon as the crippled congress is reformed, they will convene to discuss whether Alandal guild should be given independence as a separate country. It will be put up for national referendum...]

Minchan asked Haemin a question.

"What's the chatter on the internet like, director Kim?"

"It's not as chaotic as I thought it would be. The stories are all about our president, but the actions of the politicians were too dirty. There is a growing sentiment that our president had done the right thing."

"This is despite how he acted on the news?"

Kahng-woojin had seized the congress and it was shown through the live broadcast. Still, public sentiment wasn't too bad right now.

“Yes. Well, the footage of him actually killing them wasn't released...”

It wasn't as if Kahng-woojin had carried out some ghoulish show where he murdered people. He just pierced the heart of politicians who deserved death. The fact that such an act was carried out against congress members at the National Assembly was shocking, but the causality of his actions was quite clear.

It was as if this had been orchestrated by someone...

“Ha-ah. The president is really...”

He was none other than the president. Favorable words were pouring out in the media regarding Kahng-woojin that it made Minchan wonder how this could be.

If one looked at the news, one would think Kahng-woojin was a hero. They made it seem as if Woojin had known beforehand that South Korea was in enormous danger. He was being touted as a savior who had found and killed the 58 politicians with deep connections with terrorists. He had saved Korea.

“Isn't this quite fortunate for us?”

“Yes. However, I don't know what this independence is about...”

Minchan shook his head from side to side.

Alandal had gained its independence... How was such a thing possible?

“Isn't the Vatican a good example?”

Minchan let out a sight at Kim-haemin's words.

The Vatican existed as a city state, but the special status of the religion was the main reason why it was established as an independent state. No one had expected such an independent state to form in Korea.

“Hoo-ooh. I guess it's possible.”

“He already negotiated it with the President.”

Haemin's words didn't comfort Minchan at all. Unless Kahng-woojin had negotiated

all of this beforehand, the President wouldn't have mentioned it in his press conference.

"Jeez."

He thought Kahng-woojin was peerless in terms of causing trouble that was beyond one's imagination. Everyone was taken aback and shocked as they waited for the president to arrive.

After a brief moment, the car containing the president arrived at the office.

Woo-soonghoon had a haggard face, and Lee-kahngjin's face was somewhat flushed. Kahng-woojin got off the car, looking the same as ever. He just looked a little bit drowsy.

"What? Why are you guys all doing out here?"

Woojin spoke as he saw the people who had gathered in the parking lot. Minchan stepped forward and he spoke.

"President. How can you cause such a big accident?"

"The floor of the National assembly building didn't see any blood."

How can you say that..... Ah, if you were going to go through with this, it would have been better to do it inside the National Assembly building. When the seizure of congress was shown live on broadcast, do you realize how hard my heart was beating? Fortunately, the people killed has been very bad people. It was a weird situation where Woojin was being treated as a hero.....

"When did you make a deal with the President... Let's speak inside."

Minchan was about to pour out all the questions he had, but there were too many employees gathered in the surrounding. First, he guided Woojin to the president's room. As they were moving, Minchan saw someone he didn't recognize, so he asked a question.

"Who are you..."

"Ah, I'm Lee-kahngjin. I work at the Seoul District Public Prosecutor's office..."

"Ah ah! Judge Lee-kahngjin."

This young judge Lee-kahngjin was famous for being fearless. Anyone with a bit of interest in politics had heard of his name. Minchan shook his hand.

"I'm Alandal's vice president Jung-minchan."

"I've heard a lot about you."

Jung-minchan was someone who received as much public attention as Kahng-woojin. Alandal itself had rocketed into relevance in such a short amount of time, and Jung-minchan was in charge of taking care of the daily operation. Of course, he would become famous and rated fairly well by the public eye.

He wasn't a Roused. He was a normal person and his personal stock was increasing right now. He was considered to be one of the best individuals at allocating resources to support the guild. Many companies coveted him.

Woojin, Minchan, and the rest of the group gathered inside the president's room.

Sunggoo had returned from the Dungeon, so all of Alandal's founding members were present. The Holy Maiden, Holy Knight James, and Lee-kahngjin were also present in the room.

"President. What is up with this declaration of independence?"

"Uh? How did you know about that?"

The lines on Jung-minchan's face deepened when he heard Kahng-woojin's answer.

"There isn't anyone who doesn't know about it. The President of Korea made the announcement."

"Ah. I guess he finally made his decision."

Woojin nodded his head as he thought about President Kim-byungmahn, who had heeded his warning and advice.

"Recently, I've been a little bit unfair to you guys. Since I have a lot of business at the Dungeon, I couldn't manage you guys properly... You, Minchan, probably had the

hardest time..."

"I'm thankful, since you acknowledged that fact. Still, why would you declare independence..."

If he already knew Minchan was having a hard time, didn't he have to stop himself from causing such big accidents?

"If I don't, won't the government continue to bother us? I decided to make a country where we won't be disturbed. This will make things a bit easier for you."

"....."

Jung-minchan was struck dumb. He was building a nation based on such a simple reason? He was taken aback. However, he was more surprised at Woojin's ability to implement and drive a plan forward.

"What the heck did you talk with the president?"

"I just gave him a proposal. I told him I'll kill him if he blocked me from raising my country."

"....."

"If he left me alone, I told him I'll form an alliance with him."

Ha-ah. Should this be how a 21st century intellect should think? Michan's face became haggard, but the Holy Maiden praised Woojin.

"I am impressed by your benevolence."

"Isn't it? I could have killed everyone."

"....."

Minchan was barely able to gather his thoughts, and he asked a question.

"It isn't as if you can just make a country just by wishing it. So what did you agree to in this negotiation?"

Woojin thought about the conversation he had with the President.

“He wants to form a treaty with me.”

“So what's the content of that treaty?”

“You'll have to make one up.”

“.....”

“Let's see. What do we need to do if we want to make a country, Mr. Kahngjin?”

On Alphen, he just had to declare he was the king, and that was it. However, the modern society didn't work like that. Well, it was possible to do that, but if they were really going to do it, it would be better to do it properly.

“You have to at least have a judicial, administrative, and legislative branch.”

“Mmmm.”

Woojin had been summoned during his 3rd year of high school.

Alphen was basically divided into rulers and subjects. He had been the only one to survive living as a ruler for 20 years on Alphen. However, the only subjects he had under him were the Death Knights and Lich...

“Minchan.”

“Yes.”

“You are the Prime minister now.”

“Ha-ah...”

“President. I don't want such a fast promotion.”

“Dear god, how can you put me in such a position? I think you overestimated my ambitions.”

“You can come up with the rest as you consult with Mr. Lee-kahngjin.”

“.....”

Lee-kahngjin had a confused expression on his face.

‘Why am I...’

He had come at the request of the President. He was told to find Kahng-woojin and give him counsel, but he never expected.....

Not everyone inside the president's room was shocked. Sunggoo had a wide smile on his face.

“Heh heh, hyung-nim. So what am I going to be doing?”

“What do you want to do?”

“Mmm. If hyung-nim is the king, then should I be part of the royal guards?”

“Ok. Sunggoo can be the commander of the royal guards.”

“Ooh-heh heh. I gotta go boast on the SNS.”

Did the rise in Roused Rank inversely lower Sunggoo's social intellect? Sunggoo spoke with such a bright voice that the atmosphere within the president's room improved.

“Excuse me, president.”

“Uh. What role do you want?”

Soonghoon's eyes twinkled at Woojin's reply.

This was it. This was the once in a lifetime opportunity that will never come again.

Anything he said here will be granted.

“Doesn't a country need an ambassador? I think... You know I'm quite eloquent with my words...”

“All right. The Secretary of Foreign Affairs? The Minister? Do whatever you want.”

"I will move heaven and earth to do my job."

Soonghoon's face became heroic.

'I did it, mother. The Woo family name can be proud of me now.'

Jung-minchan shook his head from side to side.

If they were playing house, then Minchan would have been happy.

Woojin followed up on whatever he said. His words became reality. This was what scared him. This conversation itself was the cornerstone in building a nation...

"At least give me a direction I can work towards."

Minchan decided to stop resisting. He requested more information.

Since the President had already given his pledge, it would be hard to go back on this. Moreover, if one thought about the Vatican City, it wasn't impossible to think that a small city state could form within South Korea.

The size and the structure of the state was basically the Guild itself. They were just getting acknowledged as being an independent nation.

As Woojin intended, he would own his own country where he didn't have to be ruled over by anyone.

"What kind of direction?"

"Yes, what is the purpose of our existence? What will the Alandal Kingdom work toward to?"

Woojin answered without hesitation.

"World peace."

"....."

Was he joking or was he being serious?

At the very least, the Holy Maiden decided to accepted it as truth.

"I don't know what to say at the monarch's choice."

The Immortal had just considered world peace as a worthy cause.

He was the champion of the god of destruction... Wherever he went, death and despair had followed. However, he now was choosing to protect.

This was a drastic change.

Moreover, this was a blessing for the Planet Alphen. Kahng-woojin will be working towards world peace.

Wooji glanced at the Holy Maiden, who was overwhelmed by her emotions, then he spoke to Minchan.

"You take care of the rest. Don't think in too large of a scale."

"Understood."

No matter how one thought about it, it would be impossible not to think in large scales. However, Minchan obediently gave his answer.

'He probably can't get into a bigger accident now.'

He was already a king now, so how could there be anything bigger? Minchan really thought there wouldn't be any big accidents in the future.

'I just have to get through this business.'

He had to establish the foundation of a nation. It was a very hard task, but it wasn't as if they were stirring up a revolution inside Korea. A small entity called a guild was being given independence, and the guild would be transformed into another form called a country.

The problem was the peace treaty they would be entering into with Korea. It was up to Minchan to come up with it.

"Well, you'll have to work hard Prime minister Jung..."

“Prime minister Jung...”

He repeated back Woojin's words and Jung-minchan's face became flushed as his cheeks slightly reddened. His heart was beating faster, and it wasn't caused by his worries. It caused his heart to flutter.

The building of a nation and the treaty would be taken care by Minchan and the guild employees. If Minchan did a poor job, he would just have to go get someone who would do a good job.

Woojin had the other Alandal to deal with. His plate was full from merely ruling his Dimensional Domain.

“I want to see you for a brief moment.”

Woojin looked at the Holy Maiden. Melody had a confused expression on her face.

“Yes. My king...”

Woojin and Melody got up from the sofa.

He was very curious. The Holy Maiden had been the first person to be found inside a Dungeon. So how did she use a Dungeon to arrive on Earth?

Woojin had always been curious about that point after he became a Dimensional Lord.

Woojin opened a Return Portal in an empty location inside his office.

Zzeeeng.

“Follow me.”

“Yes...”

Woojin disappeared into the portal, and the Holy Maiden followed after him.

Every single one of the Holy Knights of the Aria church was originally from the Titan Guild.

The protection of the Holy Maiden was important to them, but they were also given

the task of keeping track of Roused Kahng-woojin.

“Shit. Notify the Titan immediately.”

At the Holy Knight James' words, a member quickly formed a message and it was sent to Titan's guild master Deacon.

[Kahng-woojin has established the country of Alandal.]

Chapter 118

Mock Battle

Zzahhng.

Woojin grabbed the back of Melody's neck after she passed through the Return Portal.

"Ooh-oohk."

She felt her neck being choked. The sudden change in her situation made Melody look back at Woojin with trembling eyes. He was glaring at her with indifferent eyes.

"Whose vassal are you?"

"P... Please Immortal..."

Melody looked at Woojin with frightened eyes. His indifferent and emotionless eyes was the gaze of the Immortal, whom she knew well. She couldn't read a single iota of emotion from his eyes. She couldn't look into his eyes.

"Speak."

Melody's neck was being squeeze, so it was hard for her to even breathe.

"It... it isn't like that. I'm also a Dimensional lord."

Woojin let go of her neck.

"Huh-ook. Huhk."

Melody was breathing hard. The Immortal has shown his killing intent for a brief, but the mental pressure she felt left her exhausted.

"So you aren't a vassal of some other Dimensional Lord?"

"Yes."

“Then how did you come through the Dungeon?”

Melody was from the Planet Alphen. She had used a Dungeon that acted as a tunnel connecting the planet to the Dimensional Domain.

She had been inside a Dungeon, yet she hadn't been harmed by the monsters.

This was why Woojin guessed that she was a vassal of the Dungeon's owner.

“I used to have a Dimensional Domain.”

“Used to? How about now?”

“It was taken away from me.”

Woojin's forehead furrowed. It seemed this story will be long. Woojin sat on his throne.

“Tell me everything.”

“I came to earth...”

The alliance forces of Planet Alphen was able to acquire 3 Dimensional Fragments after numerous warrior's sacrifices. After the Dimensional Fragments combined to form the Dimensional Proof, Melody received divine word from her goddess and she had headed towards a Dungeon.

It was an ownerless Dungeon, and the Synchronization Rate was a match with her. She became a Dimensional Lord.

At that point, she needed one more Dimensional Fragment to gain access to a Dungeon on Earth. However, during the 30 day Protection Period, she wasn't able to prepare her Domain properly. She was overwhelmed by the continuous Dimensional Battles that followed.

The cost of defeat was huge.

The Dungeon entrance into Alphen was snatched away from her.

Melody was trapped in her Dimensional Domain. She could either continue the

Dimensional Battle to take back her Dungeon or she needed to gain another Dimensional Fragment. Those were the only two choices.

However, she wasn't talented at managing her Domain. Her Dimensional Domain started to deteriorate and her Ranking plummeted.

If events continued as it had, she wouldn't be able to return to her homeland of Alphen. She was in danger of becoming a Dimensional refugee, so she once again asked for divine guidance.

"There is a savior on earth."

Melody put her full trust in the divine guidance, so she broke apart the Dimensional Proof. She voluntarily gave up her role as the Dimensional lord. It took 3 to create the Dimensional Proof, but only two were returned when dismantled.

Melody used one Fragment to buy a Dungeon in the Dimensional Store.

She wasn't a Dimensional lord any more, but she joined the ranks of the Dungeon owners. She had thrown away her Dimensional Domain to be able to come to earth, which was in a different dimension.

Her purchase of the Dungeon had reset the subway station in the US, and the first one to find her was the Titan Guild.

"Hmm."

After listening to her words, Woojin nudged his Dimensional Proof.

<If destroyed, you can earn (2) Dimensional Fragments.>

<Your rank will be demoted from 'Lord' to 'Free Citizen'.>

Melody had kept her head down respectfully after she had concluded her words.

He looked at her. At the very least, the story meant she wasn't a vassal of a different Dimensional lord.

"All right. I'll withdraw my suspicion."

“I'm thankful that you inquired about the truth.”

Woojin found out something new. It was about the first Boss monster that showed up when the Dungeon Reset happened.

‘So they are the Dungeon owners.’

If they were able to defend the Dungeon for 30 days, they were allowed to come out to the qualified Dimension. This was what the people of earth had called Dungeon Break.

The scary thing about the Dimensional lords was that they could ignore the 30 day wait period. They could send out the monsters at any time.

To be more precise, the Dimensional lord could allow the beings living in the Domain to hunt. It wasn't always monsters being sent out.

“With all due respect... The Domain's defense has to be strong, my king.”

“Kiba is here, and I have the Undead army. It should be enough.”

Woojin had the confidence that he could repel any invading force. However, Melody shook her head with a worried expression on her face.

“After the Protection period passes, you will be bombarded with requests for Dimensional Battle... When that happens, you won't be able to use your Undead army.”

“.....?”

Woojin looked at her with a face full of questions. Melody continued to speak.

“The current defense you have is only for the visitors.”

When fighting against other lords, the battle happened in a different Domain. The normal defense of the Domain couldn't be used.

When fighting enemies who passed through the Dungeon, the lord could use every single force available to him. Moreover, the lord's personal abilities could be used. However, the rules were a little bit different in a Dimensional Battle.

“It is like chess.”

In the beginning, Melody also didn't realize what was going on. In her confusion, she had lost her domain and Domain Energy bit by bit. Melody was worried Woojin would experience the same fate as her.

A new lord had a Protection period of 30 days, and one had to do one's best to build up the defense as much as possible.

“You have to gather all of your chess pieces.”

“Hmm. Tell me everything you know.”

“For the lords, the Dimensional Battle is a game and a predatory war...”

Only the lords could participate in the Dimensional Battle. It was like a chess tournament, where the lords could use the resources of the Domain to play at war.

“Would you like to participate in a mock battle?”

“A mock battle?”

When Woojin thought about the mock battle, a menu popped up.

<You can practice doing a mock Dimensional battle.>

“All right. Let's try it once.”

<Please select how much Energy you will bet. Ten thousand, twenty thousand, thirty thousand... >

He was able to bet at an increment of 10 thousand Dungeon Energy. When Woojin chose 10 thousand, a screen popped up.

<We are searching for a potential enemy. You were matched with Count Liton of the human race.>

A noble with a striking white beard appeared inside the window in front of him. A brief summary of information about the man was shown, and Woojin's vision started to zoom out.

It was similar to the time when he was constructing the buildings. His vision encompassed his entire domain as if he was looking down from the sky.

<Searching for a battlefield. The plains of Letria was chosen.>

A wasteland about the size of Woojin's Domain was chosen. It was spacious, but the terrain had numerous sinkholes in various locations.

<The Energy is being assigned to the plains of Letria.>

Ten thousand Energy was taken each from Woojin and Count Lition. A total of twenty thousand Energy transformed into Blood Plants and Blood Stones. They were assigned to various locations.

<Your mock battle with the Count Liton has started.>

<You will not lose the Energy used in the Mock Battle.>

<The winner of the mock battle will not be able to claim the other's rights.>

Woojin cleared the jam-packed messages that kept popping up and surveyed the battlefield.

He was only able to look down at the entire field for a brief moment. He felt a falling sensation, and his vision narrowed to be fixed a single being.

“Please give us our orders, lord.”

In front of Woojin, Soo-soonahk and 4 other Ho-in were in a line. Woojin raised both his hands, and he saw yellow furs. It was the arms of a being from the Ho-in race.

‘Possession?’

Woojin tilted his head in confusion as he looked at the 4 Ho-in in front of him. When he thought about possessing one of the other Ho-in, his point of view changed.

“Oohk.”

Woojin looked at the being he had been only a moment ago.

"Please give us our orders, lord."

Woojin's brows furrowed at their words.

'I think I know what's going on.'

There were 5 Ho-in including the one Woojin was possessing. With his will, he could take over and control any one of the Ho-in. Fortunately, he was used to changing souls with Ggaebi, so he quickly adjusted to this situation.

Woojin looked around his surrounding and spotted a shabby building nearby. It was hard to call it a castle, but it had a single 3 story tower. The small castle was about the size of a villa.

When Woojin stared at the building, he felt another sensation of dizziness as his soul moved. He was inside the castle, sitting on top of the throne. He was inside the building but he could see what was going on in his surrounding at a glance.

He looked at the 5 from the Ho-in race standing ready in front of the castle. Familiar yet unfamiliar numbers was fixed at the corner of his vision.

[Bloodstone 100 Population 5/10]

Woojin vaguely understood the situation.

'Chaos?'

Wasn't this like the game he used to enjoy during his high school days? No, it was a different genre.

'Isn't this like a Strategy Simulation?'

There were buildings that was considered to be bases. One had to use the workers to gather the ingredients, so one could construct more buildings. Then one had to fight the enemy and win...

"Go gather the Blood Plants."

"We will carry out your order."

Woojin's sight remained at the castle, but he could hear the Ho-in workers outside as if they were speaking right next to him. As he sat on the throne, he found out that it was possible for him to construct other types of buildings.

[Hut, Farm, Tree of Temptation, Orc Training Facility, Wyvern's Nest...]

Woojin nodded his head as he looked at the buildings he could build. He now understood why she had called this a chess game.

The units and buildings one could use in the Dimensional Battle was all the things he possessed in his Dimensional Domain.

One couldn't use the Dimensional Store during a battle, so one needed to possess the buildings beforehand.

The Energy was spread all across the plains, but Woojin wasn't able to build a Bloodstone mine. Moreover, the military buildings he could build was only the Orc Training Facility and Wyvern's nest. The Orc Training facility didn't require a lot of Bloodstones to build, but the Wyvern's nest required an enormous amount of Bloodstones.

'It won't be efficient to build the nest.'

While he was saving up enough bloodstones to build a Wyvern's nest, he might be attacked, and he might lose the Dimensional battle.

Woojin decided to produce workers(50) that could be created by the castle. It didn't take long before two workers filed out from the castle, and they stood ready outside.

Woojin added two more to the group to make a group of seven members. He ordered them to gather the Blood plants. They diligently gathered the Blood plants in the surrounding, and he was able to reach 500 Bloodstones. He instructed the workers to create the Orc Training facility.

Two from the Ho-in race was deployed to build an Orc Training facility near the castle.

During all of this, the 5 workers were still busily gathering the Blood plants. As the training facility was being built, he created 3 more workers.

<You've exceeded the population limit. Please build a hut.>

"Jeez... It's been awhile since I've done this, but this is quite frustrating."

Woojin felt frustration wash over him. He had tens of thousand Undead troops and Death Knights, but he wasn't able to use them.

"What the hell are they doing?"

Why were the Dimensional lords playing these games? Why were they betting Energy to increase their Rankings?

While Woojin cooled the anger that was rising within him, the additional hut was built.

The limit to his population increased by 20, and the construction of the Orc training facility was finished.

<Orc Soldier : 50, Orc Warrior 150>

The forces he could train was the same as the one in Woojin's Dimensional Domain. He ordered the production of two soldiers. An Orc opened the door to the newly built hut and headed inside the training facility.

The waiting period was 5 times longer as creating a worker. Around 10 minutes had passed.

Woojin frowned as he waited for the Orc Soldier to come out.

'It'll be hard to prepare everything during the Protection Period.'

In the real Dimensional battle, he wouldn't be able to go to war with just the Orc Training Facility and the Wyvern's Nest. Moreover, the Bloodstone mines were a must.

There were a lot of basic buildings a Domain needed.

One had to have acquire a lot of ingredients in the Dimensional Domain to use it in the Dimensional Battle.

His troop's Skill Tree or Combination wasn't available in the Dimensional Battle, since it didn't exist in his Dimensional Domain. He would also have to research into the Defensive buildings he couldn't build right now.

He only had 6 days left.

He wasn't sure if he would be able to have the basic war capabilities by then.....

After 10 minutes, the Orc sauntered out of the training facility. The orc was equipped with a spear, and he came out as a burly soldier.

When he had three Orc Soldiers, he could see 7 foot soldiers of Count Liton approaching from the distance. They were equipped with sword, shield and leather armor. They looked quite formidable.

“This is really frustrating.”

It felt as if his hands and legs had been tied.

He had only 3 Orc Soldiers he could use.

Chapter 119

Battle (1)

Kwahhh!

The Orc Soldiers let out a roar to boost their courage.

Since it was a battle between 7 vs 3, the result seemed already set in stone. Woojin possessed one of the Orc Soldiers to direct the three Orcs.

He had lost 3 Orc Soldiers, yet he was able to eliminate 4 infantrymen. However, there were still 3 enemies left.

“Everyone gather here.”

Woojin gathered all the workers, and a single Orc Soldier exited the training facility just in time. He once again possessed the Orc Soldier and was able to eliminate all four infantryman.

However, Woojin could see 10 more infantrymen approaching from the distance.

“I lost. How frustrating.”

This was like playing with dolls.

Woojin ended the mock battle without any regrets.

Hweeeehk.

The vision in front of him crumbled and the world broke apart. He blinked as his vision brightened once again, and Woojin was able to see his Dimensional Domain. The Holy Maiden hadn't moved an inch as she waited for him.

“How was it?”

“It was very frustrating.”

It was understandable. One's own abilities were restricted. The Immortal had never experienced such an event before, so his frustration would be felt that much more.

“All the Dimensional lords are doing this?”

The other lords were growing their own Dimensional Domain through these frivolous matches? Woojin tasted bitterness in his mouth. The ingredient that fueled all of this was the Energy. When he thought about the methods used by the lords to gather those Energies, he couldn't help, but be in a bad temper.

“The Dimensional Battle is important to them. They bet small, but it is a safe and prudent way to increase their rankings.”

Even if one lost 10% of the Dungeon Energy, it wasn't a large amount. The danger from participating in it was low. If one was in danger, one could be like the Holy Maiden, who was able to break the Dimensional Proof to discard the position of being a lord.

“This is so stupid.”

This was the reason why they invaded other Dimensions to gather Bloodstones...

“What's this Duel supposed to be?”

“Dimensional Battle is a battle between Dimensional Domain... Duel is a fight between the lords.”

“So I just have to do the Duels from the start.”

“Duel cannot proceed unless both party agrees to it. The only time you can forcefully start a Duel is as a revenge for losing the Dimensional Battle.”

Woojin grinned. He had been frustrated by the Dimensional battle, but he liked how the Duel worked.

“All right. If that's doesn't work, then I can just Raid their Dungeons.”

If he didn't like the lord vs lord battles, he could challenge their Domain as an Adventurer. Woojin had cleared Rahsmode's Laboratory and Juliel's Field after he challenged them.

Since they didn't have the Rank of lord, he had no choice but to choose the Clear option.

"Well, all right. It seems it will be important for me to earn another Dimensional Fragment."

If he wanted to purchase a Dungeon, he needed a Dimensional Fragment. It didn't matter if he was opening a Gate into Alphen. He also had to be ready for the unforeseen circumstances where he might need a spare Dungeon that could connect to Earth. He needed to gather as many Dimensional Fragments as he could.

'Who care about losing 10% of the Energy'

He was going to try to maximize his remaining Protection period by getting ready, but it couldn't be helped if it was too late to do so. Nothing would change by worrying about it. If nothing could change the outcome, it was better for him to give up cleanly. It was better to focus on what would come afterwards in the future.

Woojin stood up from his Throne.

"I'm sorry for my misunderstanding."

"N... not at all."

The Immortal gave an apology... Melody was too taken aback, so she didn't know what to do with herself. Woojin grinned, and he opened a portal to the Seoul Station's 1st Exit.

"You can go now. I still have to make preparations."

"Yes."

Melody gave her farewell. She passed through the portal and exited the large hall of Woojin's throne room.

"Master!"

Bibi ran towards Woojin and hugged him. Her cheeks were puffed out as she glanced around the interior of the castle.

“The Holy Maiden is gone?”

“She's gone.”

“Uh whew. I was so surprised.”

All of Woojin's Familiars hated the Holy Maiden. They were all Undead, so they didn't mix well with the Holy Maiden. It was inevitable for them to dislike her. Bibi, who was a devil, seemed to be in the same boat. She felt an instinctual repulsion.

“Heh heh. Jaemin is doing better now.”

“Oh, is that so?”

This was the best news he had heard today.

“What is he doing right now?”

“He hunted in the morning. Now he is at his house.”

Woojin opened his Achievement Store, and he bought a manual about the Dimensional Battle. He looked through it, and there wasn't anything new in it. It was basically what he had learned in the mock battle. It explained the basics, and the system.

“Try reading this. You'll be going out to the Dimensional Battle in my stead.”

“All right.”

Bibi took the book and skipped away. She went into a cute hut placed in front of the castle. It seemed Bibi had bought herself a house.

“I can give the authority to my vassal to act as my proxy.”

If he couldn't avoid the upcoming Dimensional Battles, then he would just have to participate in it. It would be great if he could win. However, if his preparations were inadequate, he couldn't do anything about it. It was unfortunate.

Instead, he must get his revenge through the Duel.

The Great Lords of the 72 Thrones were very high in their rankings, yet Woojin was

confident that he would be able to hold his own against them in a Duel. If he was going to lose the Dimensional Battle, he didn't need to participate in it.

He'll just let Bibi have some fun as a form of entertainment. If he lost Energy or items, he'll just take it back through the Duel.

Woojin sloughed off the frustration he had felt from the mock battle and headed towards Jaemin's house.

"Are you here, Jaemin?"

"Yes, hyung."

Woojin opened the door and he entered. Jaemin was sitting on the table reading a book.

"Huh. Where did you get a book?"

"I bought it from a general store right in front of here."

One week had passed in reality, but about 20 days had passed inside the Dimensional Domain. Woojin had developed his Domain as he focused on the living situation of the people inside his Domain.

There used to be only an empty lot present, but he had erected a lot of buildings. He created a lot of shops like the general store, a butcher shop, pub, restaurants, and even a cafe.

He was taking in refugees at a steady rate, so he had the Ho-in race, Orcs, Dwarves, and even a couple humans present here. They had all become residents of the Domain.

Woojin had only one policy. He didn't allow the residents to hunt in the only Dungeon he had. There was no merit system, since the 'Seoul Station's 1st Exit', was off limits.

Since he wasn't charging any fees for refugees staying only for a brief period, there was no harm to his policy.

"What kind of book is it?"

It's just a travel book."

Woojin glanced at the book cover, and it was traveler's journal of the author visiting the most famous Dimensional Domains.

Woojin sat on the table.

"I heard you hunted earlier."

"...Yes."

"How was it?"

"It was... Well..."

Jaemin scratched the back of his head with an awkward expression on his face.

His thirst for blood had worsened, so he asked Kiba to hunt with him. If he didn't, there was a chance he would have jumped a resident after losing his mind.

There wasn't much difference between the monsters and refugees.

If they followed the Domain's rule for resettlement, they were refugees. If they didn't, they were treated as monsters. It didn't matter what race they were from.

Humans hunted humans. Orcs and Elves worked with each other.

Jaemin had been shocked at his own change, and he had been shocked by the existence of other Dimensional Domains. However, it seemed he was getting a bit used to the situation.

"How about we go see your sister now?"

"Mmm. Can my sister come here?"

"It'll be hard for your noonah."

Only the Roused could enter the Dungeons. To be precise, only the Roused could pass through the Portal.

Jiwon was a normal person with no abilities. Moreover, when he thought about her clear soul, there was a very slim chance she would be able to become a Roused.

"I'll head out... However, please tell her to wait a little bit more."

"Well, you take your time."

Jiwon was very worried about him, but in the end, Jaemin had to sort through all of this by himself.

"Also, hyung..."

"Uh, what?"

Jaemin looked at Woojin with a serious expression.

"Is hyung a god?"

"A god..."

Jaemin was truly curious about this point.

Within his Dimensional Domain, it wasn't an exaggeration to think of a lord as a god.

If one had the Energy, one could make anything come true.

Was he a god?

Woojini shook his head from side to side.

"I'm human."

He had met gods before, but they were different from him. No, he wanted to stay different from them.

"Whew. Oh yeah. The people here are worried."

"Who?"

"The Domain residents are worried. They said the lord here is a push... over. They were worried about your Domain being seized by someone else."

It was easy to see why he would look like a pushover to them.

Normally, the lords required an incredible amount tax when a refugee wanted to settle in their Domain. Currently, Woojin didn't even ask for a resettlement fee. He gathered tax through the businesses he ran.

Since he owned a farm gathering Blood plants, there were a lot of refugees staying and wanting to work for him.

Since Woojin didn't hunt in his Dungeon, the amount of Bloodstones he gathered was low. If one didn't have a strong defense, there was a good chance this Domain would become prey to the other lords.

If this Domain was attacked, their situation would worsen and they would have to travel again to other Domains as refugees.

Woojin replied with a question of his own.

“Do I look like a pushover?”

“No way.”

Woojin didn't feel the need to squeeze everything out of his Domain's residents. His goal was the 72 Thrones that was way ahead of him. He had no plan on mucking around with the low ranking lords.

“Don't stay inside the house too much. You should hunt like today. In a way, aren't you a Roused now?”

“A Roused?”

“Yes. From a normal person's perspective, all Roused are monsters.”

“A Roused...”

Jaemin quietly chewed on that word.

He had a Blood drinking ability and a Transformation ability. Should he view himself as a Roused, who was a bit special?

“You should rest.”

“Yes, hyung.”

Woojin left Jaemin's house.

Woojin watched the beings of various races walking on the roads constructed between the buildings. They took a peek at Woojin and gave their greetings. When the train of greetings stopped, they started to carefully move away from him. Woojin smirked as he looked at them.

‘A pushover.’

If he thought about how frustratingly the Dimensional Battle proceeded, they might have a valid point. If he didn't have a talent for coming up with strategies, he might lose every time. The Dimensional Battle itself was basically a noble's game.

The lords could fight each other without putting themselves out there.

They preserved their own lives while using their underlings to bring in the Energy. This methodology was incompatible with Woojin.

“I don't care which loser comes after me. They better be ready for me.”

Who cares about losing ten thousand or twenty thousand Energy Points?

He'll take his revenge through the Duel and he'll just take it all back. Woojin was looking forward to it. He waited to see who would be the first one to request a Dimensional Battle.



The Dimensional Domain, Comode's Swamp, was ranked 3,213.

Chief Comode was the owner of this Domain. He was long in body, and he had long canines. He was of the Troll race.

“Goo-hoo-hoo. Here's a good prey.”

Comode looked at the new Domain Alandal which was a single rank ahead of his. He smiled with his eyes.

Why were the beginner lords given the Protection period?

It was given so they could make preparations and fortifications. However, it was rare to find a new lord, who had made the proper preparations.

“His name is Kahng-woojin. He is a beginner amongst beginners.”

He was the first Dimensional lord to be registered from a Dimension called Earth.

This Dimensional lord had no prior experience of ruling over a Dimensional domain, so there was no way he would be ready. Even if he was prepared, he would be bad at the Dimensional Battle.

“I'll have to target him before everyone else does. Goo-hoo-hoo.”

This kind of Domains were first come, first serve.

It was best to bet the maximum amount, while the new lord had no idea what was going on. He had to rip him off in a single battle. If he did this right, he would have the chance to go up 300 ranking spots at once.

Comode waited for the new Domain Alandal's Protection period to end. He sat on the Domain's Throne an hour before the Protection period ended, and he got ready to send the Dimensional Battle request.

He had to be faster than his other competitors!

When the time finally came, Comode requested a Dimensional Battle. He was buoyed with expectation.

As his heart beat faster from the anticipation, his eyes suddenly widened.

<The Dimensional Battle with Alandal has started.>

“Goo-hahaha.”

Comode let out a yell of delight.

“Shall I go rip him off?”

Commode was sitting in his throne, and he headed towards the field where the Dimensional Domain would take place.



<You received a request for Dimensional Battle from Comode. Will you like to refuse?>

<You can refuse up to three times. Afterwards, it will proceed forcefully.>

<If you win, you will gain 4 days of Protection period. If you lose, you will be given 12 days of Protection period.>

“It's finally here.”

Woojin grinned as he sat on his throne. There was a small chair in front of him.

<Dimensional Domain Commander>

Bibi, who was going to carry out the Dimensional Battle in his stead, was sitting there. She had a determined expression on her face.

“Go gamble away to your heart's content.”

“Hoong. I'll win, so you don't have to worry about it. You promised. If I win, you'll let me use half of the Energy?”

Woojin smirked at Bibi's determined answer.

“Of course.”

He didn't care if she won or lost. He'll get his revenge after the battle.

Chapter 120

Battle (2)

<You have bet the minimum points of 10,000.>

He wanted to bet only 10%, but the minimum he could bet was 10,000.

<The opponent has bet his Dungeon. Would you like to include 'Seoul Station's 1st Exit' to the bet?>

“No.”

He couldn't put his Dungeon on the line in an uncertain battle. When Woojin refused that bet, his opponent tried to make several more bets. The opponent tried to bet for other items, equipments, even main buildings in his Domain. However, he rejected them all.

<The Dimensional Battle with 10,000 points on the line is starting.>

In the end, the battle started with the most basic 10,000 points on the line.

Woojin sat on his throne. He was laid back as he viewed the Dimensional Battle.

He only had a brief amount of time but he was able to build military facilities and supply depots inside his Domain. Thus, it was possible to use those building inside the Dimensional Battle.

Bibi had studied as best as she could with the book. She substantially increased the size of her camp and expanded the troops under her. However, the control she had over the battle was where she was lacking compared to her opponent. She was holding on for now, but defeat seemed inevitable.

He felt sorry for Bibi, but he had seen enough. Woojin pulled up the information regarding the opposing lord.

“He's a Troll.”

One could watch the opposing lord's stratagem to get a general feel for his tendencies. However, one couldn't get any information regarding the lord's personal power or combat power.

The Dimensional Battle wasn't about the lord's strength. It was about the power of one's Domain, and the Domain was competing against each other.

The only information known was the opponent's race, name, and ranking.

Woojin knew this lord was 1 ranking below him. However, the difference of several points could change one's ranking by several dozen spots, therefore the lower ranking didn't mean much in actuality.

Woojin's personal powers were on par with the 72 Thrones. Still, powerful lords might exist below the top 3,000 ranking. He wouldn't know it until he faced them.

<You've lost the Dimensional Battle.>

<You lost 10,000 points.>

<Comode will start the Victor's Claim. The Domain's Storage Room is being looted.>

<You've lost a Reinforcement Stone. You've lost Ranick's Leather..... >

“Huh. Would you look at this son of a bitch?”

This was the Victor's Claim that occurred when one won the Dimensional Battle.

Comode didn't know what he was looting, but he continued to loot the Domain's Storage Room.

The Domain's Storage Room was like Woojin's Inventory. He lost several ingredients, and several worthless items was included in the loot as well. It seemed the loot was chosen at random.

If he was unlucky, he might have lost a rare item.

“I'll have to take it out beforehand.”

If he lost something like the Dragon's Heart, how much regret would he have felt?

Woojin had stolen it from Rashmode, of course, but he would still have felt the loss.

“I'll loot two times what I lost.”

While he was checking the looted items, Bibi regained her senses. She had been sitting on the Commander's Seat and her unfocused eyes came into focus. Then her eyes started to moisten, followed by tears.

“Ooh-ahhhng, master.”

Bibi suddenly stood up and hugged Woojin.

It wasn't as bad as experiencing death where she felt futility among other terrible things. Still, it didn't feel good to lose. Woojin didn't want to feel the dirty feeling of losing, so Bibi had substituted for Woojin in the Dimensional Battle.

“It's all right.”

“Hoo-ehhng.”

Bibi really wanted to win, yet she had lost. Her tears kept falling from the indignation. Woojin mussed up her hair.

“Stop crying.”

“Hoo-oohk, hook.”

Bibi sniffed as she stopped her tears. She then spoke quietly.

“I'm sorry. I wanted to win.....”

“It's all right if you lose.”

“Heeeng. Still...”

“Anyways, I plan on getting my revenge.”

At Woojin's word, Bibi wiped her tears with her sleeve and pouted.

“Please beat that bastard for me.”

“I will.”

Woojin pinched Bibi's cheek and sat down on his Throne.

<You have requested a Duel with Comode.>

<The Loser's Revenge will be initiated.>

Woojin's body disappeared as he was summoned to the battlefield.



“Goo-haha.”

Comode broke out into an uproarious laughter.

“At least, he has some knowledge about this.”

Alandal's lord Kahng-woojin had put forth a poor strategist to substitute for him. He probably thought he was using someone proficient at the Dimensional Battle, but the strategist wasn't a match for Comode.

Those who were great at Dimensional Battles were expensive to hire.

The high rank lords all kept a strategist, but they were low ranking lords in the 4 digits. Of course, low ranking lords didn't have good strategists.

Either the strategist was a swindler or the being probably had a mediocre winning rate.

Since Kahng-woojin had sent forth a useless strategist, he won the Dimensional Battle easily.

“Goo-hoohoo. This is why I like beginners.”

The chance of winning against beginners was always good. It was too bad that Kahng-woojin was a lord with a timid personality. He had bet the lowest amount of points possible. The 10 thousand points was less than the reward for the victory.

On top of it all, the items he looted weren't that rare. It was unfortunate, but he didn't

particularly care right now. It had been awhile since he had won, so he was in a good mood. Moreover, one happy event happened after another.

<Kahng-woojin has requested a Duel.>

“Huh? Goo-hahaha. This is why I love beginners.”

Since he had lost, he should have just accepted the loss. He should have pulled himself together inside his Domain for the next 12 days. This human was attacking him out of pure ignorance. Comode was thankful.

“You dare to go up against Comode-nim. Koo-koo-koohk.”

Every lord's personality was different.

There were those who had weak personal powers but were great at stratagem. This allowed them to occupy the high ranks through the Dimensional Battle. However, there were also those who were the opposite of the former.

Commode was more confident in his own power than his skill in the Dimensional Battle. He was a great chief who had been in competition to become the Troll King. His combat power was naturally not low.

If he was able to acquire a decent strategist, Comode was confident he would be able reach the three digit number in ranking.

Normally, lords didn't like to duel. There were too many variables. The benefit was large, but at the same time, the risk was large too.

If the Dimensional Battle was a chess match, the Duel was basically a wrestling match.

There were some lords who liked Duels more than the Dimensional Battle, but they were few in number.

“Goo-hoohoo. This time I'll take him for all he is worth.”

It seemed Kahng-woojin wanted his revenge. He probably requested the Duel through sheer ignorance. Of course, this was a mistake.

Comode's body suddenly disappeared and he was summoned to the battlefield.



Woojin was summoned to a land covered with ice.

<If victorious, you can carry out the the Victor's Claim and the Revenger's Punishment.>

<If you lose, you will experience death. You will be revived after 12 days.>

If one listened to the Announcement, one could understand why Dimensional lords preferred Dimensional Battles over Duels.

“This is why they don't like doing this.”

If one loses a Duel, one experiences death. If one was revived after 12 days, one would lose the time needed to prepare one's Domain for the next Dimensional Battle. After revival, one would have to immediately accept another Dimensional Battle.

One's life was on the line, so it was easy to see why they were hesitant to do this. This was why they insisted on using their underlings through the Dimensional Battle.

“This is laughable.”

Woojin had killed Rashmode and Juliel, but they were revived.

Did those bastards also lose sleep trying to decide if they should put their life on the Dimensional Battles?

They probably did.

If they were all on the same side, Alphen would have been taken over in an instant. The planet was merely being used as a hunting ground to gather Energy.

Now that he was a Dimensional lord he was able to feel it.

He realized how frustrating these rules were.

There must be something at the end of the rank. He didn't know what it was, but it was something all the lords wanted.

If he diligently progressed in his Dimensional Battle, would he then raise his rank?

“The board was very poorly made.”

He had fought desperately for his survival, but now he felt as if he was a fish in a bowl.

He was angry.

This was an elaborate and frustrating league setup only for them...

Moreover, it felt as if he was on the starting line. It didn't feel great for him.

“I'll fuck it up.”

His personality didn't allow him to meekly follow the rule.

He'll break it all into pieces.

He was the god of destruction's champion.

Woojin stepped onto a land surrounded by glaciers, after which the Troll chief Comode appeared in front of him.

“Goo-hoohoo. I'll make an offer, new lord.”

“.....?”

Woojin tilted his head in puzzlement when he saw the unusually happy Troll.

“It would suck if treasure wasn't included in a bloody fight. Since this is a fight between males, how about we bet a Dungeon on this?”

What the hell? What was up with this pushover?

When Woojin didn't answer him, Comode started intentionally provoking him.

“Woah. Are you perhaps worried about losing? You can't reach the high ranks with that kind of mentality.”

Woojin smirked as he opened his mouth.

“All right. I'll bet my Dungeon. In fact, let's increase the stakes.”

"Huh? Really? Goo-hahaha. You are quite open-minded. How about we bet an additional 20 thousand points?"

"All right."

When Woojin easily accepted the deal, Comode let out a wicked laugh inside. This idiot's brave spirit would cause him to lose his Domain soon. It was obvious he would become a refugee soon.

'Goo-hooohoo. I've come across the right pushover.'

Comode was filled with anticipation as he bet his Dungeon.

<You have bet Planet Earth's 'Seoul Station's 1st Exit'.>

<You have bet Planet Jaku's 'Necia's Pillar'.>

'It would have been great if the Dungeon was located on Planet Alphen.'

Woojin soothed his frustration inside.

It wouldn't be an easy task to meet a lord with a Dungeon on Planet Alphen. It might be faster to earn a Dimensional Fragment and purchase an empty Dungeon on Alphen.

"Goo-haha. You rookie bastard! Shall we start the Duel?"

Comode mocked Kahng-woojin who had fallen for Comode's provocations and bet his Dungeon. He grabbed the empty air, bringing out a club with long thorns attached to it.

Boohng, boohng.

He was a weak being from the human race.

He was an evolved Troll. The noob lord's height only reached his waist and he probably didn't have much experience in fighting.

"Stupid noob bastard. It is too late to regret this. Goo-haha."

Koohng, koohng.

The frozen land let out a cry each time Comode's foot landed, and fragments of ice was thrown into the surrounding.

Woojin let out a bloody smile as he watched Comode brainlessly run straight at him.

"I'm guessing there aren't many pushovers like him."

<Lv 54 Comode, Lord of the Swamps>

If all lords was like Comode, he would easily reach the upper ranks.

Woojin took out his Steel Staff. As soon as it was summoned, he changed it into a hammer. Then he swung it towards Comode's club.

Kwahhhng!

"Goo-oohk."

The human's height reached Comode's waist, but he was surprisingly strong.

'This human from earth has great combat powers.'

However, Comode used to be a chief who had led a tribe!

His strength couldn't be compared to a normal human.

Boooooohng, kwahng!

Unfortunately, it was an overreach to call Woojin a normal human.

"Goo-uh-uhk."

Woojin dodged the club and swung his hammer at Comode's knee. The large being swayed. As Comode fell to the floor, the shape of the weapon immediately morphed into an axe, with which Woojini brought down.

Kwah-jeek!

"Gwuhhhhng!"

Even through his pain, Comode swung his club towards Woojin, but the Spirit Armor formed near his head. The club bounced off.

Too-ahng!

The club was sent flying by the recoil and Woojin's axe came down on Comode's shoulder.

"Goo-uhhhhk! W... wait a moment."

Comode's eyes were rolled back as if he was already losing consciousness. He yelled out but Woojin's axe strike didn't slow at all as it struck Comode's neck.

Kwah-jahk!

"Trolls are a bit tenacious."

When fighting a troll, one shouldn't even think about a protracted battle. They had monstrous amount of stamina and regeneration ability...

Trolls could recover from critical wounds in moments. It was best to kill it as fast as possible.

<Level Up!>

Comode's corpse disappeared as it changed into gray light. Woojin let out a bitter laugh.

"I'm really happy with the amount of EXP."

Was it because he was a Dimensional Lord? The Troll's level was pathetic, but it gave him a lot of EXP.

<You've won in the Duel against Comode.>

<You've succeeded in your revenge.>

"Shall I loot now?"

It had been a long while since Woojin had reverted to being the Immortal.



PtF by: traitorATZEN